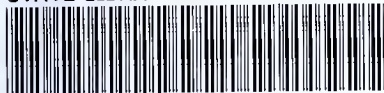


STATE LIBRARY OF PENNSYLVANIA



3 0144 00050127 0



INDIANS IN PENNSYLVANIA

BY PAUL A. W. WALLACE



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016 with funding from

This project is made possible by a grant from the Institute of Museum and Library Services as administered by the Pennsylvania Department of Education through the Office of Commonwealth Libraries

~~DEC 2 - 1965~~

PY 146732

I 39

1964

c. 2

DOCUMENTS SECTION

Indians in Pennsylvania



Indians in Pennsylvania

BY
PAUL A. W. WALLACE

Illustrated by
WILLIAM ROHRBECK

SECOND PRINTING
FIRST PRINTING, 1961

COMMONWEALTH OF PENNSYLVANIA
THE PENNSYLVANIA HISTORICAL AND
MUSEUM COMMISSION
Harrisburg, Pennsylvania
1964

JOHN
BOWEN
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS

16261

77 H675.2
I 39
1964
THE PENNSYLVANIA HISTORICAL
AND MUSEUM COMMISSION

JAMES B. STEVENSON, *Chairman*

HERMAN BLUM

MRS. HENRY P. HOFFSTOT, JR.

EDWIN B. CODDINGTON

MAURICE A. MOOK

RALPH HAZELTINE

CHARLES G. WEBB

MRS. FERNE SMITH HETRICK

THOMAS ELLIOTT WYNNE

GEORGE W. HOFFMAN, *ex officio*
Acting Superintendent of Public Instruction

MEMBERS FROM THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

J. DEAN POLEN, *Representative*

JOHN H. WARE, III, *Senator*

ISRAEL STIEFEL, *Senator*

NORMAN WOOD, *Representative*

TRUSTEES EX OFFICIO

WILLIAM W. SCRANTON, *Governor of the Commonwealth*

THOMAS Z. MINEHART, *Auditor General*

GRACE M. SLOAN, *State Treasurer*

ADMINISTRATIVE STAFF

SYLVESTER K. STEVENS, *Executive Director*

WILLIAM J. WEWER, *Executive Assistant*

WILLIAM N. RICHARDS, *Director*

Bureau of Museums, Historic Sites, and Properties

DONALD H. KENT, *Director*

Bureau of Research, Publications, and Records

Foreword

Despite the great popular interest in the Pennsylvania Indians, there has never been a brief, reliable account of their history and customs. Older writings were incomplete and often mistaken. Recent writings have usually been detailed studies of special topics, often too technical for all but the specialist. There has been a real need for a simply written history which covers the whole story of the Indians in Pennsylvania and takes into account the findings of modern scholars. In his book Dr. Wallace attempts to fill that need. It is hoped that the book will be a useful tool for the teacher and that it will provide a sound foundation for those who wish to learn more about these first inhabitants of Pennsylvania.

S. W. HIGGINBOTHAM, *Director*

Bureau of Research, Publications, and Records

February 10, 1961.

Acknowledgments

The author wishes to acknowledge the generous assistance he has received from the staff of the Pennsylvania Historical and Museum Commission, in particular Dr. S. K. Stevens, Executive Director; Dr. S. W. Higginbotham, Director of the Bureau of Research, Publications, and Records; Mr. Donald H. Kent, Chief of the Division of Research and Publications; Mr. William A. Hunter, Associate Historian; Mr. John Witthoft, Archaeologist; Mr. W. Fred Kinsey, III, Chief Curator; Mrs. Autumn Leonard, Assistant Historian; Mrs. Betsey D. Smith, Librarian; Mr. Karl Rath, Photographer.

He is indebted also to Dr. R. Norris Williams, 2nd, Director, and the staff of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania; Dr. Richard Shryock, Librarian, Mrs. Gertrude D. Hess, Assistant Librarian, and the staff of the American Philosophical Society; the Right Reverend Kenneth G. Hamilton, Archivist, and the Reverend John Fliegel, Archives of the Moravian Church, Bethlehem, Pa.; Dr. Anthony F. C. Wallace and the late Dr. Frank G. Speck, University of Pennsylvania; Dr. William N. Fenton, Director of the New York State Museum, and Dr. William A. Ritchie, New York State Archaeologist, Albany, N. Y.; Mr. Merle H. Deardorff, Warren, Pa.; Dr. W. W. Newcomb, Jr., Director of the Texas Memorial Museum, Austin, Texas; the late Nicodemus Peters (*Nekatcit*) and the late Chief Joseph Montour of the Delaware Line, Six Nations Reserve, Ontario; Chief Alexander General (*Deskaheh*) of the Cayugas, and the late Chief William Dewaserage Loft (*Sharenkhowane*) of the Mohawks, also of the Six Nations Reserve; Ray Fadden (*Aren Akweks*) and John Fadden (*Ka-hon-hes*) of Onchiota, N. Y.; and many other Indian friends who have helped the author to get the facts about their ancient people without losing vision of them as human beings.

Acknowledgment is herewith made to the following persons and institutions for permission to quote from books and manuscripts as indicated: Cornell University Press, for *Indian Affairs in Colonial New York*, by Allen W. Trelease; the John Day Company, for *The Maple Sugar Book*, by Helen and Scott Nearing; Dr. Amandus Johnson, Governor of the Swedish Colonial Society, for Lindeström's *Geographia Americae*; the Michigan Historical Collections, University of Michigan, for C. C. Trowbridge's "Account of Some of the Traditions,

Manners and Customs of the Lenee Lenaupée or Delaware Indians"; Archives of the Moravian Church, for John Jacob Schmick's report of November 18, 1766, in the Bethlehem Diary; the University of Nebraska Press, for *The World's Rim*, by Hartley Burr Alexander; the University of Oklahoma Press, for *Civilization: As Told to Florence Drake* by Thomas Wildcat Alford.

The author wishes also to thank *Pennsylvania History* for permission to use passages from his article, "The Iroquois: A Brief Outline of Their History," which appeared in *The Livingston Indian Records* (*Pennsylvania History*, XXIII, 15-28).

To Mr. William Rohrbeck, who designed the cover and drew the pictures in this Book, special thanks are due for his understanding and generous assistance in interpreting the Indians of the past.

For the reader who wishes to explore this subject further, there has been added to this second printing a short bibliography of works concerning Indian life and culture.

Contents

<i>Foreword</i>	v
<i>Acknowledgments</i>	vii
<i>Illustrations and Maps</i>	x
1. <i>The Origin of Pennsylvania's Indians</i>	3
2. <i>The Susquehannocks and Their Western Neighbors</i>	8
3. <i>The Delawares: Physical Appearance and Dress</i>	16
4. <i>Delaware Villages and Houses</i>	25
5. <i>Delaware Occupations</i>	30
6. <i>Delaware Travel</i>	40
7. <i>Delaware Warfare</i>	46
8. <i>Delaware Government and Social Organization</i>	50
9. <i>The Delaware Life Cycle</i>	58
10. <i>Delaware Religion</i>	63
11. <i>Delaware Amusements</i>	77
12. <i>The Iroquois Confederacy</i>	84
13. <i>The Beaver Wars</i>	95
14. <i>Indian Refugees in Pennsylvania</i>	104
15. <i>The Shawnees</i>	114
16. <i>Indian Land Cessions and Delaware Migrations</i>	126
17. <i>Pennsylvania's Indian Policy</i>	140
18. <i>Pennsylvania's Indian Wars</i>	145
19. <i>The Cornplanter Grant</i>	165
20. <i>Envoi</i>	169
<i>Famous Indians of Pennsylvania</i>	171
<i>Bibliography</i>	181
<i>Index</i>	185

Illustrations

<i>The World on the Turtle's Back. After John Fadden . . .</i>	Frontispiece
<i>Killing a Mastodon</i>	3
<i>Interior of a Longhouse</i>	8
<i>Susquehannock Warrior. From Smith's Map of Virginia . . .</i>	10
<i>Delaware Costumes</i>	16
<i>Delaware Ear Decoration. After St. Mémin's Portrait</i>	24
<i>Delaware Longhouse and Village</i>	25
<i>Delawares at Work</i>	30
<i>Building a Dugout Canoe</i>	40
<i>Delaware War Dance</i>	46
<i>A Speech in Council</i>	50
<i>The Penn Wampum Belt</i>	54
<i>Youth's Vigil</i>	58
<i>Narrating a Vision</i>	63
<i>The Moccasin Game</i>	77
<i>The Hiawatha Belt</i>	84
<i>Pictograph of the Tree of Peace</i>	91
<i>Pictograph of the Iroquois Confederacy</i>	94
<i>Ambushing a Fur Fleet</i>	95
<i>Refugees Tracing the Roots of the Tree of Peace</i>	104
<i>Running the Gantlet</i>	114
<i>The Delawares Leave Pennsylvania</i>	126
<i>Conrad Weiser at Onondaga</i>	140
<i>The Battle of Bushy Run</i>	145
<i>The Three Messengers</i>	165

Maps

<i>Pennsylvania's Main Indian Paths</i>	42
<i>Movement of Refugee Peoples to the Iroquois Country</i>	106
<i>Indian Land Cessions in Pennsylvania</i>	130
<i>Distribution of Pennsylvania Indians about 1600</i>	136
<i>Distribution of Pennsylvania Indians about 1725</i>	136
<i>Distribution of Pennsylvania Indians about 1753</i>	137
<i>Distribution of Pennsylvania Indians about 1774</i>	137

Indians in Pennsylvania



The Origin of Pennsylvania's Indians

IMMIGRATION FROM ASIA

THE DELAWARES who, as far back as the white man's memory goes, were the Indians most closely associated with Pennsylvania, called themselves *Lenni Lenape* (pronounced Len-nee Le-nah-pay), which means the Real (or Original) People. If the name sounds arrogant, we should remember that all nations like to think themselves unique. We who live in "God's Country" should not have difficulty in understanding this, nor should Englishmen who sing:

When Britain first at Heaven's command
Arose from out the azure main. . . .

Other Indian nations gave themselves comparable names. *Illinois* means Real Men; *Ongwe Honwe* (Iroquois), Original People: names which suggest priority over all other peoples on earth. "We are 'the

People,' " said Emerson Metoxon (an Oneida) to me, with a twinkle in his eye. "The rest are only Indians."

The human race, however, did not originate on this continent. No trace has been found here of man's parent stock. We may leave aside also (for lack of sufficient evidence) theories that would trace the American Indians back to the lost Atlantis, to the Egyptians, to the Welsh, to the Lost Ten Tribes of Israel, or to islands in the South Pacific—the debt in this last case being probably in the other direction.

The ancestors of the American Indian came from Asia. People of differing physical types, so it is thought, crossed Bering Strait in a succession of migrations to the New World. They came in bands, crossing from Siberia to the Seward Peninsula of Alaska before, during, and after the last Ice Age. From Alaska many of them moved south, some by a route roughly corresponding with that now taken by the Alcan Highway from Fairbanks, Alaska, to Edmonton, Alberta. They spread out all over the two Americas, leaving a trail of spear points from Alaska to Tierra del Fuego. Certain of those Asiatic immigrants were the ancestors of our Pennsylvania Indians.

By what route Indians first crossed the Plains is not known, nor how long ago it was that they first entered Pennsylvania. Archaeologists tell us that man has probably been on this continent for at least twenty-five or thirty thousand years and in Pennsylvania for between twelve and eighteen thousand. The Indian is a well-naturalized American.

DEVELOPMENT OF CULTURE ON THIS CONTINENT

The first migrations to America were made by a primitive people, bringing from Asia little on which to build a civilization except language, the mastery of fire, a few tools, and simple forms of social organization based on kinship and the local band. These early-comers had no pottery and they knew nothing about farming. The great agricultural discoveries which were to constitute the Indian's chief gift to mankind were made on this continent.

Early man in Pennsylvania left no records on stone, clay, or parchment to tell us who he was and what he did. For his prehistory—the thousands of years he lived in America before the white man came to make written records—we must rely chiefly on the findings of archaeologists. These carefully trained scientists dig their evidence out of the ground: fragments of stone, bone, and pottery, and (very rarely) wooden tools and containers or cordage and fabrics. From a close study of such objects and the places where they are found, archae-

ologists have learned much about the way the Indian developed his material culture.

Simple as aboriginal culture may appear when we compare it with modern ways of living (with refrigerators, television sets, and jet planes), its evolution was complex and progressive. The Indians changed from a hunting to a diversified economy, from a life of roving in search of game to village and town life based upon farming.

Eleven thousand years ago the Indian lived a nomadic life, hunting big game with a stabbing spear, roasting his meat, and wearing clothes made of animal skins. Eight thousand years ago he was still a nomad, but within recognized family territories. His diet was improved by fishing and the gathering of roots, nuts, and berries. Six thousand years ago he had added a spearthrower to improve the reach of his weapon. He traveled the rivers in canoes, and added shellfish to his diet.

More than three thousand years ago in Pennsylvania he was cultivating the ground. Indian corn or maize has been called the mother of civilization in America. Its cultivation for food freed men from hunting. It gave them time to sit and think, to attend council meetings, and so to develop political forms.

Before the beginning of the Christian era, the Indian was living in a village leading a more or less sedentary life, making pottery, stewing his meat, and enjoying trade with distant tribes. He had adopted the bow (apparently a new contribution from Arctic-Asiatic culture), and he chipped flint expertly to make arrowheads. His diet was now based on maize culture. He grew tobacco and used it, not only for pleasure, but also as incense in elaborate religious ritual. Before the white man came, the Indian population was increasing, town life had developed, hunting had declined, and farming had become intensive. Then came Columbus, Jacques Cartier, and the *Mayflower*. In the scramble that ensued the Indian population was decimated by gunpowder and European diseases.

When the white man arrived, the Indians were far less primitive than their Asiatic ancestors had been. On this continent they had advanced to comparatively high forms of culture. Yet if we judge Pennsylvania's aborigines by European standards and *on material grounds alone*, they were primitive. That does not mean that their men and women were inferior in physique, brain power, ethics, or capacity for further development. It means only that they had fallen behind in the mechanical arts, which provide a convenient, if superficial, ladder on which to measure the ascent of man. In toolmaking, they were still of the Stone Age.

Ellsworth Huntington in *The Mainsprings of Civilization* suggests eight criteria by which to measure progress in material civilization:

1. The development of tools, in numbers and precision.
2. The raising of cereals.
3. Irrigation.
4. The taming of animals.
5. The construction of advanced forms of houses.
6. The making of good highways.
7. The smelting of metals.
8. The use of pictographs or letters.

The Indians of Mexico, Central America, and the Andes were highly advanced in all these categories at the time of Columbus' discovery of America. But the picture changes as we come north. For whatever reason, the Indians of the northeastern United States fell short of the southern Indians and of the Europeans.

It does not appear to have been lack of initiative or ingenuity that held them back. It was rather the smallness of their population. They had not yet developed a city life, which, with its commerce and book-keeping, is the usual spur to the invention of a written language. They used metals (copper, lead), but they had not discovered the secret of smelting iron. They had had the further bad luck to have no domesticable animals available, like the sheep or the alpaca, to provide wool for clothing, and they had no draft animals larger than the wolflike Indian dog. The bison was too slow and clumsy to be useful except as food. Even if there had been animals that in course of time might have been bred to domesticity like European cattle, good pasturage in Pennsylvania (before the introduction of "English grass") was not everywhere available.

The woodland pasturage was soon exhausted [writes Stevenson Whitcomb Fletcher]. It was mostly of coarse species, principally wild rye (*Elymus* sp.) and broom straw (*Andropogon* sp.). Grazing prevented these from re-seeding. . . . Cattle might eke out a meager existence on tree and brush browse, particularly red maple, but this was a desperate expedient.¹

On the other hand, the Indians were far advanced in the raising of cereals. Their corn was so highly domesticated that it could not seed itself but had to be planted anew each year. Their longhouses were substantial. Their highways or paths, though unpaved, were well routed for distant travel by moccasined men and women. As for

¹ *Pennsylvania Agriculture and Country Life, 1640-1840* (Harrisburg, 1950), 154.

irrigation, they had little need of it, the population being small and food abundant.

Their most serious handicap may have been the absence of a written language. They had pictographs, it is true. On the inner bark of peeled trees their pictographs recorded simple events such as the exploits of hunters and warriors. For this purpose they used conventional figures which everyone, whatever his tribe or language, could understand. When woven into wampum belts, pictographs assisted the memory. They helped recall the terms of treaties. But such methods were not capable of preserving the exact information on which science depends nor of conveying ideas from age to age with any precision.

When the white man came, the Indian was quick to see the superiority of metal tools and at once set about getting them. The fur trade, which was his means to that end, all but ruined him, as we shall see. When he came to himself and developed, as the Cherokees did, a written language of his own, it was too late. The white man, impatient as man has always been with those who are a little behind in the race for material goods, brushed him aside, as we see in the "Trail of Tears": the forcible removal of the Cherokees from Georgia in 1838.

Pennsylvania's Indians, when the white man arrived, were in that stage of development which archaeologists call the Woodland Epoch. They lived in towns, made good pottery, dressed in soft and beautifully decorated leather garments, and expressed an artistic instinct in the carving of ornaments, the weaving of feather blankets, and the singing and dancing that accompanied their imaginative religious ritual. They had developed, moreover, a system of social restraints which, except for the cruelties committed during war, produced a high degree of gentleness and harmony in their relations with one another.

In the clash between the races, atrocities were committed on both sides, a circumstance that has colored social attitudes ever since. It is well for white men, as they read about the early American Indians (and people in other parts of the world now emerging from centuries of thoughtless exploitation by white men), to heed the advice of Dr. Hartley Burr Alexander in his preface to *The World's Rim*:

We judge our own humanity by its white pages, not by its black, especially when we are concerned with what most gives us courage to live or what most deeply explains our understanding of life. We should assess the thought of another race by standards no less generous, nor can our hope for humanity anywhere rest upon a lesser truth.²

² (Lincoln, Nebraska, 1953), xi.



The Susquehannocks and Their Western Neighbors

THERE WERE, at the opening of the seventeenth century, three and possibly four distinct Indian peoples living in Pennsylvania:

1. The Delawares or *Lenni Lenape*, living for the most part on or near the Delaware River.
2. The Susquehannocks, living in the Susquehanna River basin.
3. The so-called Monongahela people (a modern name; we do not know what they called themselves), living on the upper Ohio River and its tributaries: the Monongahela, Allegheny, Youghiogheny, Kiskiminetas, and Beaver rivers.
4. The Eries, living on the south shore of Lake Erie.

A fifth people important to Pennsylvania history, but living at that time outside her geographical limits, were the Iroquois, the Five

Nations. Their territory lay to the north, extending in a belt across upstate New York from the Hudson to the Genesee by way of the Mohawk River and the Finger Lakes.

We shall leave the Delawares for more detailed study in later chapters, while we discuss here briefly the Susquehannocks and their western neighbors.

THE SUSQUEHANNOCKS

When in 1608 John Smith sailed up the Susquehanna River to the fall line (Deposit, Maryland), he met there a body of sixty Susquehannock warriors. At his invitation, they had made the two-day journey from their settlement near present Washington Boro in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. He left a lively account of his impressions of that meeting. If it be read with a little caution (Smith did not lie, but he leaned over backward to avoid understatement), it is an excellent introduction to these people, who had as yet been little touched by the presence of white men on this continent.

But to proceed, 60 of those Sasquesahanocks came to the discoverers with skins, Bowes, Arrowes, Targets, Beads, Swords, and Tobacco pipes for presents. Such great and well proportioned men, are seldome seene, for they seemed like Giants to the English, yea and to the neighbours: yet seemed of an honest and simple disposition, with much adoe restrained from adoring the discoverers as Gods. Those are the most strange people of all those Countries, both in language and attire; for their language it may well besee me their proportions, sounding from them, as it were a great voice in a vault, or cave, as an Eccho. Their attire is the skinnnes of Beares and Woolves, some have Cassacks made of Beares heades and skinnnes that a mans necke goes through the skinnnes neck, and the eares of the beare fastned to his shoulders behind, the nose and teeth hanging downe his breast, and at the end of the nose hung a Beares Pawe: the halfe sleeves comming to the elbowes were the neckes of Beares and the armes through the mouth, with pawes hanging at their noses. One had the head of a Woolfe hanging in a chaine for a Jewell; his Tobacco pipe 3 quarters of a yard long, prettily carved with a Bird, a Beare, a Deare, or some such devise at the great end, sufficient to beat out the braines of a man: with bowes, and arrowes, and clubs, sutable to their greatnesse and conditions. . . . They can make neere 600 able and mighty men, and are pallisadoed in their Townes to defend them from the Massawomekes their mortall enimies. 5 of their chiefe Werowances came aboard the discoverers, and crossed the Bay in their Barge. The picture of the greatest of them is signified in the Mappe. The calfe of whose leg was 3 quarters of a yard

about: and all the rest of his limbes so answerable to that proportion, that he seemed the goodliest man that ever we beheld. His haire, the one side was long, the other shore close with a ridge over his crown like a cocks combe. His arrowes were five quarters [of a yard] long, headed with flints or splinters of stones, in forme like a heart, an inch broad, and an inch and a halfe or more long. These hee wore in a woolves skinne at his backe for his quiver, his bow in the one hand and his clubbe in the other, as is described.¹



Like the great Elizabethans, of which company he was a belated member, Captain John Smith (1579-1631) was intoxicated with words. We must not expect his measurements to tally exactly with those of science. A man's calf that tapes twenty-seven inches owes something to the imagination. But it is a mistake to think him an impostor. (See Marshall Fishwick's article, "Was John Smith a Liar?" in *American Heritage*, October, 1958.) Smith did actually see the things he said he did. But, in order to make his readers see them, he splashed down lively impressions in a manner that betrays the artist as well as the adventurer. When he likened the speech of these warriors to a great

voice sounding in a vault, he was trying to share the excitement he had felt when listening to a flow of language so different from the clipped English speech he was familiar with. He used a simile that comes to our own minds today when, at Onondaga, let us say, we hear a kindred Iroquoian tongue spoken by a people who love language. When he tells us that these well-proportioned men "seemed like Giants to the English," we need not take him to mean (as an early historian of Maryland, George Alsop, did in 1666) that they were seven feet tall. Susquehannock graves give no indication that these people were tall according to modern standards.

The Susquehannocks lived in stockaded villages, each headed by a chief. Their typical longhouse, like that of the Iroquois north of them, was from thirty to a hundred or more feet in length, having a door at each end, a corridor down the middle, and bunks lining the

¹Lyon G. Tyler (ed.), *Narratives of Early Virginia, 1606-1625* (New York, 1907), 87-89.

sides. Each family (mother, father, and children) lived round a hearth in the corridor, with a smoke hole above it. Several families occupied the longhouse, being separated from each other by bark partitions between the bunks.

In contrast to Europeans, the Susquehannocks and other Indians of Pennsylvania had a "matriarchal" society. That is, they traced descent through the mother, not the father. Married men lived with their wives' families. All the "fires" or families in a longhouse were under the authority of an elder matron.

John Smith called these people "Sasquesahanocks." That was not the name they gave themselves, but one John Smith apparently picked up from his Indian interpreter, who is thought to have been a Powhatan. The word "Susquehannock" is not now in current Indian use. Of the many interpretations that have been made of it, "people of a well-watered land" seems the most adequate.

Other names have been given them. The Delaware Indians, who have preserved through all their adversities a strong sense of humor and impropriety, called them *Minquas* (a name subsequently corrupted in English usage to *Mingo* and applied to the Iroquois) which means "stealthy" or "treacherous." It might be added that this was not the only occasion on which the Delawares enjoyed a public joke at the expense of outsiders. They managed also to give international currency to their private name for the Caniengas: *Mohawuk* or *Mohawk*, which, meaning "man-eater," is their word for "louse."

The French called the Susquehannocks *Andastes* and *Gandastogues* ("people of the blackened ridge pole"). The name *Gandastogues* has been preserved in such Lancaster County names as Conestoga Indian Town, Conestoga Manor, Conestoga Creek, and the Conestoga wagon.

In his map of Virginia, 1612, John Smith showed six Susquehannock towns: Sasquesahanough (the principal town, from which came the warriors he met), Quadroque, Attaock, Tesinigh, Utchowig, Cepowig. Despite many ingenious attempts to identify them, the exact sites, with the exception of the first, remain in question. All that it is safe to say is that in 1608 there were Susquehannocks living in a large town, Sasquesahanough, on the east side of the Susquehanna River at Washington Boro, Pennsylvania, about half a mile north of a low-water ford (later known as the Blue Rock Ford) which crossed the river, here a mile and three quarters wide, to a point above the mouth of Canadochly Creek. From this place trails ran west to the Potomac and the Monongahela.

The Susquehannocks were an alert, well-organized, military people, and great traders. Their influence extended far. Although archaeological exploration of their town and camp sites has only begun, already it has shown their presence not only on the lower Susquehanna but also on the North and West Branches of that river, on the Rays-town Branch of the Juniata, and on the South Branch of the Potomac.

Susquehannocks were established at an early time in the fertile region around the Forks of the Susquehanna (Tioga Point), where the Chemung River joins the North Branch at present Athens, Pennsylvania. From the evidence of Samuel de Champlain's journal, 1615, it appears that a considerable number of them were still living in that year round the Forks. According to current archaeological evidence, however, a large Susquehannock community such as John Smith described had been on the lower Susquehanna as early as 1580. Some archaeologists are not satisfied that Susquehannocks were living in any large numbers at Tioga as late as 1615, but the documentary evidence is too solid to be brushed aside. May it be that between 1580 and 1615 the Susquehannocks were divided, and that the final withdrawal from the mother settlement at Tioga was not completed until after 1615?

The Susquehannocks differed sharply from the Delawares in that they possessed a superior political and military tradition. In this respect they were like the Five Nations north of them and the Hurons still farther north. These three nations were members of the Iroquoian linguistic family, whose territory extended in an unbroken block from Lake Huron to Chesapeake Bay. The Hurons (Wyandots) with their affiliated tribes (Petun or Tobacco Nation, Neutral, and Wenro) held the land from the Georgian Bay to Niagara and a little beyond. The Iroquois Confederacy controlled the territory between Lake Ontario and, roughly, the northern bounds of what is now Pennsylvania. The Susquehannocks at one time or another commanded a large part of the drainage area of the Susquehanna River, both the North and West Branches. When the fur trade developed, these three Iroquoian powers—Huron, Iroquois, Susquehannock—were able to cut off the coastal tribes, whose forest wealth of fur-bearing animals was soon exhausted, from the rich hunting lands of the interior, and so to seize the position of middlemen in the trade.

The story of the ensuing Beaver Wars, during the course of which the Susquehannocks were driven out of Pennsylvania (to reappear later in a small band of so-called Conestogas), will be found in Chapter 13.

THE MONONGAHELA PEOPLE

The country of the Susquehannocks was bounded on the west by the Allegheny Mountains, which walled off the Ohio-Allegheny drainage from the Susquehanna Basin and Chesapeake Bay. These mountains, however, were penetrated and all but breached by the headwaters of three eastern rivers: the Potomac, the Juniata, and the West Branch of the Susquehanna.

That the Susquehannocks spread west along these valleys is attested by archaeological findings like those at the Sheep Rock shelter on the Raystown Branch of the Juniata and at the Herriot Farm Site, six miles north of Romney, on the South Branch of the Potomac in West Virginia. From similar evidence, we know that the Susquehannocks had close contact with Indians beyond the mountain barrier.

In the valleys of the Monongahela and Ohio-Allegheny, traces have been found of a vanished culture which, shortly before its disappearance, suffered what archaeologists call an intrusion of Susquehannock influence. Whether this intrusion was the result of trade or conquest, we do not know.

Whoever they were, whatever their relation to Indians known in recorded history, the culture of the Monongahela people was evidently derived in part from the highly developed Indians of the Mississippi Valley. To judge from the graves, post molds, and refuse pits of the Monongahela people, they were the most highly advanced Indians known to have inhabited the upper Ohio Valley. They had disappeared before anyone came to record their institutions; but archaeologists have been at work, and some of the externals of their culture have been described by Dr. William J. Mayer-Oakes in his *Prehistory of the Upper Ohio Valley*.²

The Monongahela people lived in stockaded villages, situated often in commanding positions on hilltops. Within the stockade, dome-shaped (beehive) houses were arranged in a rough circle. House construction was simple. Saplings were driven into the ground in a circle about twenty feet in diameter. The tops were bent inward till the ends met and were lashed together. The frame was then covered with bark or mats made of rushes.

These people lived by agriculture, their diet being supplemented by hunting and fishing. The staple foods were the traditional Three Sisters: corn, beans, and squash. Attached to the houses were post-lined storage pits where dried corn and other foods were preserved, either to tide over emergencies or, in good times, to provide leisure

² (Pittsburgh, 1955).

for the food gatherers. Boiled victuals, of which their meals chiefly consisted, were eaten out of pottery bowls. Spoons for this purpose were made of elk antlers.

That they were an artistic people is seen in the many handsome stone and pottery tobacco pipes of which fragments have been found, and in well-designed ornaments of shell, stone, pottery, bone, or even cannel coal.

Of their political and social organization we know nothing with any certainty. We do not know what name they gave themselves, what language they spoke, nor what divisions there were among them.

Their trail, after they disappeared from these parts, has never been picked up. We do not know whether they moved away of their own choice or were wiped out by war or disease. Some think they may have been destroyed by epidemics originating with white men. The Indians had established no immunity to European diseases and were defenseless against measles, smallpox, syphilis, and tuberculosis. Such diseases, brought by ships touching on the Atlantic coast, spread like forest fires into the interior, wiping out whole tribes that had not yet even been "discovered."

Others think the Monongahela people may have been destroyed by the Susquehannocks from the east or by the Senecas from the north. It is possible that the long war between the Susquehannocks and the Iroquois (of whom the Senecas were a part) for the furs of the Ohio Valley may have made this middle ground untenable by neutrals.

The important thing to remember is that the disappearance of these people during the early years of the seventeenth century left whole sections of western Pennsylvania bare of inhabitants. When the Iroquois-Susquehannock war was over, these lands were occupied by bands of other Indians, among them the Delawares and Shawnees who had been pushed out of their homes in eastern Pennsylvania.

THE ERIES

The south shore of Lake Erie was the home of a people known to the French as the Eriechronon or Cat Nation—named, not for the wild-cat as commonly supposed, but for the raccoon (as some think) or the panther. The Eries were of Iroquoian stock, related to the Hurons and Susquehannocks as well as to the Senecas and other members of the Iroquois Confederacy. Little is known about them except their impact on other peoples. No white man visited their country until after their dispersion in 1655-1656, but the Jesuit missionaries received reports about them from the Hurons, Neutrals, and Senecas.

We do not know whether they were a single nation, a confederacy, or a neighborhood of separate peoples thrown together by the chance of war. The location of their towns and the extent of their hunting grounds are matters much discussed by historians, archaeologists, ethnologists, and linguists. But we know that they were an entity of some kind with a geographical base, and that the Iroquois conquered them in 1655-1656.

Some think the Erie territory was in Ohio exclusively; others, that it extended from Ohio across Pennsylvania's Erie Triangle well into New York. Dr. Marian White of the Buffalo Museum of Science finds evidence of the Eries in the vicinity of Buffalo. The commonly accepted view is that of Reuben Gold Thwaites, editor of the *Jesuit Relations*: "It is highly probable that Eighteen Mile Creek—the Kohg-quaw-gu of the Senecas—marked the eastern limit of their territory." Eighteenmile Creek is near North Evans, New York, scarcely twenty miles southwest of Buffalo.

We conclude this brief description of the Eries with a passage from Father François Le Mercier, dated September 21, 1654:

They [the Iroquois] informed us that a fresh war had broken out against them, and thrown them all into a state of alarm; that the Ehriehronnons were arming against them (these we call the Cat Nation). They informed us that a village of Sonnontoehronnon Iroquois had been already taken and set on fire at their first approach They declared, in a word, that all the four Nations of the upper Iroquois were on fire; that they were leaguings together, and arming to repulse this enemy. . . .

The Cat Nation is very populous, having been reinforced by some Hurons, who scattered in all directions when their country was laid waste, and who now have stirred up this war which is filling the Iroquois with alarm. Two thousand men are reckoned upon, well skilled in war, although they have no firearms. Notwithstanding this, they fight like Frenchmen, bravely sustaining the first discharge of the Iroquois, who are armed with our muskets, and then falling upon them with a hail-storm of poisoned arrows, which they discharge eight or ten times before a musket can be reloaded.³

³ Reuben Gold Thwaites (ed.), *The Jesuit Relations and Allied Documents*, 73 vols. (Cleveland, 1896-1901), XLI, 81, 83.



The Delawares: Physical Appearance and Dress

THE LENNI LENAPE or Delaware Indians were a loose confederation of Algonkian tribes which, at the opening of the seventeenth century, occupied a continuous territory from Delaware Bay to Manhattan Island and up the west bank of the Hudson to Kingston, New York. Their lands included the coast of Delaware north of Cape Henlopen, most of New Jersey, a piece of southeastern New York, and Pennsylvania east of the height of land between the Delaware and Susquehanna rivers. In language and customs they were not very different from the Wappinger division of the Mahicans to the north and the Montauk division on Long Island. They were also closely related to the Conoys and the Nanticokes of Maryland.

They called themselves Lenni Lenape, "the Original People," and were addressed as "Grandfathers" by most of their Algonkian-speaking neighbors. The English called them Delawares because they were seen on the Delaware River. They called that river, *Lenapewihittuk*, River of the Lenape; but the English named it in honor of Thomas West, Baron De La Warr, first governor (appointed February 28, 1609/10) of Virginia.

PENN'S DESCRIPTION OF THE DELAWARES

The first good description of the Delawares comes from William Penn's letter to the Free Society of Traders in 1683. He was writing in a more scientific age than Captain John Smith's, and after much longer and closer observation of the Delawares than Smith had had of the Susquehannocks. Penn's account, though enthusiastic, is discriminating. In the following selected passages he gives us his early impressions of the Delawares, their outward appearance and inner qualities, their sports, and their dining habits. It is a more penetrating appraisal than the speed and ease of the style might suggest, and it will serve as a good general introduction to these people as they were nearly three hundred years ago:

For their Persons, they are generally tall, streight, well-built, and of singular Proportion; they tread strong and clever, and mostly walk with a lofty Chin: Of Complexion, Black, but by design, as the Gypsies in England: They grease themselves with Bears-fat clarified, and using no defence against Sun or Weather, their skins must needs be swarthy; Their Eye is little and black, not unlike a straight-look't Jew: The thick Lip and flat Nose, so frequent with the East-Indians and Blacks, are not common to them; for I have seen as comely European-like faces among them of both, as on your side the Sea; and truly an Italian Complexion hath not much more of the White, and the Noses of several of them have as much of the Roman.

When Penn came to deal with them, he was impressed by two things, their revengefulness and their open-hearted generosity:

. . . They are great Concealers of their own Resentments, brought to it, I believe, by the Revenge that hath been practised among them; in either of these, they are not exceeded by the Italians. . . .

. . . But in Liberality they excell, nothing is too good for their friend; give them a fine Gun, Coat, or other thing, it may pass twenty hands, before it sticks; light of Heart, strong Affections, but soon spent; the most merry Creatures that live, Feast and Dance perpetually; they never have much, nor want much: Wealth circulateth like the Blood, all parts partake; and though none shall want what another hath, yet exact Observers of Property. Some Kings have sold, others presented me with several parcels of Land; the Pay or Presents I made them, were not hoarded by the particular Owners. . . . We sweat and toil to live; their pleasure feeds them, I mean, their Hunting, Fishing and Fowling, and this Table is spread every where; they eat twice a day, Morning and Evening; their Seats and Table are the Ground.¹

¹ Albert Cook Myers (ed.), *Narratives of Early Pennsylvania, West New Jersey, and Delaware, 1630-1707* (New York, 1912), 230, 232-33.

At the time Penn wrote those words, the Delawares had been in contact with white men for at least a hundred years, and in close contact for almost sixty, the Dutch having built Fort Nassau opposite the mouth of the Schuylkill in 1624. During that time the material culture of the Delawares had undergone some change. The use of English cloth, tools, and weapons had become common. Yet it is doubtful if their inner culture had changed much from what it was in 1608 or even 1497, when John Cabot first saw the coast of North America.

In bodily appearance and clothing the eastern Indians of whatever tribe were all very much alike. There were some differences in dress, especially in the matter of ornamentation, which served to identify the wearer's nationality. But fashions in clothing were international then as they are now. In describing Delaware costume and physique, therefore, we are describing most Indians of this area.

PHYSIQUE

David Zeisberger in the winter of 1780-1781 described the North American Indians as of medium height. On the other hand, Francis Daniel Pastorius (founder of Germantown), writing in the 1690's, said, "They are generally tall of stature,"² and a great many other early travelers said the same. If these latter are right, it does not mean that the Indians of three hundred years ago were taller than most Americans are today. It means only that the white man since that time has added several inches to his stature, thanks very largely to an improved diet. In the old days the Indian's diet was probably better (in quality if not in quantity) than the white man's. But the white man has now caught up.

The Indians differed little from Europeans in their anatomy, but they had finer bones, a lighter frame. They were broad-shouldered and strong, but their muscles were smoother and more gracile. They were slender-waisted, wiry, quick on their feet, and capable of long endurance as well as of sudden bursts of energy.

They had broad cheekbones and well-shaped but usually not prominent noses, in this differing from the hawk-nosed Indians of the Plains. Their eyes were dark. Their hair was black and straight. Like the gypsies, they were brown-skinned. "Redskin" is a misnomer. "Some are light brown," wrote Zeisberger, "hardly to be distinguished from a brown European, did not their eyes and hair betray them."³

² *Ibid.*, 433.

³ David Zeisberger, "A History of the Indians," *Ohio Archaeological and Historical Society Quarterly*, XIX (1910), 12.

CLOTHING

Delaware clothing was simple and less out of key with modern taste than with Victorian. The men wore a belt, a breechclout (equivalent to our bathing trunks), and moccasins—in summer as a rule, nothing more. Small children wore nothing at all.

The belt was made of deerskin or wampum, sometimes highly decorated. The breechclout was a length of soft deerskin passed under the body between the legs, brought up inside the belt, and folded out over it so as to hang down, front and back, like a small apron. The moccasins were of laced deerskin, decorated with porcupine quills and wampum. For cool weather there were other vestments. A robe made of skins—deer, bear, beaver, raccoon—or even of woven turkey and goose feathers, was thrown over the shoulder: sometimes over both shoulders, but more commonly over the left shoulder only, in order to leave the right arm free. The upper ends were tied together. The robe was worn with the fur next to the body in winter, outside in warm weather. In sewing skins together for a long garment, care was taken to set the hair all one way so that the rain would run off.

In place of the robe, or under it, a deerskin jacket might be worn. It reached a little below the knee. Leggings of fringed buckskin fastened with thongs to the waist-belt descended from above the knee to below the ankle.

These garments, decorated with designs in wampum (shell beads) or porcupine quills, made a handsome wardrobe. The gaudy green, red, blue, and black blankets which the white trader introduced made at best a cheap substitute.

Women's clothing was much like the men's except that the women wore a knee-length skirt, made by folding a rectangular piece of deer-skin over the waist-belt and doubling it on the right side. Ornaments of deer antlers and wampum hung round the neck, wrist, and ankle. In later years, the trader's brass and silver trinkets were much prized, and Indian women wore little bells round their ankles and silver trinkets that tinkled as they walked.

Among the Indians there was little or no "keeping up with the Joneses," yet they took pride in their personal appearance. The vermilion pot with its bright red paint, shell tweezers for pulling out hair on the face, and bear's grease for the hair and for the body were household necessities. In northwestern Pennsylvania, petroleum (later known as Seneca Oil) was used as an ointment. Bear's grease and petroleum had an odor unpleasant to Europeans, but it must not be thought that the early Indians were a filthy people. They kept themselves cleaner than most white men of that day. Delaware young

people were accustomed to a daily swim in the stream; and their elders, when tired or ill, took steam baths in a "sweat lodge" to restore them. Well or ill, they seldom let a week go by without one or two visits to the sweat lodge.

DRESSING THE HAIR

Women let their hair grow long. George Henry Loskiel, the Moravian, writing in the late eighteenth century, tells us that in his day nothing was more shameful for a woman than to have her hair cut off. "The Delaware women," he wrote, "never plait their hair, but fold and tie it round with a piece of cloth. Some tie it behind, then roll it up, and wrap a ribband or the skin of a serpent round it, so as almost to resemble a bag-wig."⁴

In earlier times they used deerskin and wampum rather than cloth and ribbon on their hair. To give hair a gloss, they applied bear's grease.

THE SCALP LOCK

The men, wrote Loskiel, "never suffer their hair to grow long, and some even pull so much of it out by the roots, that a little only remains round the crown of the head, forming a round crest, of about two inches in diameter."⁵ That was the scalp lock. It was carefully tended in time of war as a symbol of manhood and a defiance to the enemy. Even in peacetime, and especially in preparation for a dance, it was not unusual for a young man to shave his head with a sharp flint stone or to pluck out the hairs.

Fashions in scalp locks differed from tribe to tribe. Men might be neglectful of them during a period of peace, but on the approach of war scalp locks appeared everywhere. Men shaved their heads and greased the lock to make it stand erect. When they "put the plume on," an eagle plume, that was equivalent to mobilization. The eagle plume was not the long feather worn for decoration, but a fluffy white spray. It was believed that this would confer the eagle's courage on anyone who wore it.

THE BEARD

Indians with beards were rare but not unknown. Hair grew sparsely on their faces. They got rid of what little they had by taking a pair

⁴*History of the Mission of the United Brethren Among the Indians in North America*, 3 vols. (London, 1794), I, 52.

⁵*Ibid.*, 48.

of mussel shells which had been sharpened on a stone and pulling the hair out by the roots. John Heckewelder, a Moravian missionary who lived among the Delawares for many years during the second half of the eighteenth century, has given us a vivid picture of the process:

This they do in a very quick manner, much like the plucking of a fowl, and the oftener they pluck out their hair, the finer it grows afterwards, so that at last there appears hardly any, the whole having been rooted out. The principal reasons which they give for thus plucking out their beards and the hair next to their foreheads, are that they may have a clean skin to lay the paint on, when they dress for their festivals or dances, and to facilitate the *tattooing* themselves, a custom formerly much in use among them, especially with those who had distinguished themselves by their valour, and acquired celebrity. They say that either painting or tattooing on a hairy face or body would have a disgusting appearance.⁶

FEATHERS

Long feathers were worn by men in the hair for adornment. The number of feathers and the angle at which they were worn are said to have indicated the tribe a man belonged to. The Delawares usually wore only one or two feathers in the headdress, never the Siouan war bonnet with its showy circlet and tail, which today is mistakenly assumed to have been worn by all Indians. Women did not wear feathers at all in their hair.

Feathers were frequently put to more practical use. "They also make very fine and beautiful quilts of painted bird feathers," wrote Peter Lindeström in his *Geographia Americae* (based on notes made by him, 1654-1655). "In the first place they tie them with meshes like nets, yet very fine; then they fasten the feathers in the meshes, so neat and strong that not one feather can come loose from it. . . ."⁷ This work was usually done by old people, requiring as it did the patience and dexterity by which age compensated for loss of youthful ardor.

FACE PAINTING

Painting the face was a universal custom among both men and women. Every color they used had a special meaning. White was a symbol of peace; black of evil, grief, and death. Warriors streaked their faces with black and sent black wampum to their allies as a summons to war.

⁶ *History, Manners, and Customs of the Indian Nations Who Once Inhabited Pennsylvania and the Neighbouring States* (Philadelphia, 1876), 205.

⁷ Peter M. Lindeström, *Geographia Americae, with an Account of the Delaware Indians* . . . (Philadelphia, 1925), 221-22.

Women, Loskiel tells us, liked to paint a round red spot on each cheek. They also reddened their eyelids, and sometimes used red on the rims of their ears and on their temples. Nice women were restrained in the use of paint, but men of all sorts laid it on thick. "Every one follows his own fancy," wrote Loskiel, "and exerts his powers of invention, to excel others, and have something peculiar to himself. One prides himself with the figure of a serpent upon each cheek, another with that of a tortoise, deer, bear, or some other creature, as his arms and signature."⁸

"Here and there," wrote Zeisberger, "black spots may be introduced, or they paint one-half of their head and face black, the other red."⁹

John Heckewelder tells of an Indian friend who painted his face so ingeniously that, when seen from one side, his head looked like an eagle with round, pointed beak, while from the other it seemed to be the snout of an open-jawed pike.

In wartime, black was applied on a vermilion base to both face and body in bars and zigzags. Sometimes a warrior's eyes were circled in black to make him more fearsome. Streaking the face with black was a ritual preparation for war, public or private. Mushemeelin blacked himself thus before killing Jack Armstrong at the Juniata Narrows (since that time known as Jack's Narrows) near present Mount Union, Pennsylvania.

Dr. Frank G. Speck has told us that "The proper native source of red for face painting, which the Delawares believe to have been created for their use by the Great Spirit, is Blood-root (*Sanguinaria canadensis*)."¹⁰ Loskiel noted that "Near the river Muskingum a yellow ochre is found, which, when burnt, makes a beautiful red color."¹¹ Wood ash or black shale, such as is found (and still used as a paint base) in the old Indian quarry near Muncy, Pennsylvania, was a common source for black paint.

TATTOOING

The process of tattooing [wrote Heckewelder], which I once saw performed, is quickly done, and does not seem to give much pain. They have poplar bark in readiness burnt and reduced to a powder, the figures that are to be tattooed are marked or designed on the skin; the operator . . . quickly pricks over the whole so that blood is drawn, then a coat of this powder is laid and left on to dry. Before the whites came into this country,

⁸ *History of the Mission*, I, 49.

⁹ "History of the Indians," 87.

¹⁰ *A Study of the Delaware Indian Big House Ceremony* (Harrisburg, 1931), 71.

¹¹ *History of the Mission*, I, 49.

they scarified themselves for this purpose with sharp flint stones, or pricked themselves with the sharp teeth of a fish.¹²

The face was tattooed as well as the body. Most men were content to carry on their persons simple pictures of animals, birds, and snakes. A certain famous Munsee warrior, on the other hand, made his skin portray the story of his whole adventurous life. Heckewelder describes it thus: "Besides that his body was full of scars, where he had been struck and pierced by the arrows of the enemy, there was not a spot to be seen, on that part of it which was exposed to view, but what was tattooed over with some drawing relative to his achievements"—a spectacle which, in its total effect, "struck the beholder with amazement and terror."¹³

The same warrior, who in his middle years became a Christian and was baptized by the Moravians under the name of "Michael," made a striking end. Loskiel writes:

The serenity of his countenance, when laid in his coffin, made a singular contrast with the figures, scarified upon his face when a warrior. These were as follows: upon the right cheek and temple, a large snake; from the under-lip a pole passed over the nose, and between the eyes to the top of his forehead, ornamented at every quarter of an inch with round marks, representing scalps: upon the left cheek, two lances crossing each other; and upon the lower jaw the head of a wild boar. All these figures were executed with remarkable neatness.¹⁴

NOSE AND EAR DECORATION

Some Indians pierced the nose and wore, suspended below the nostrils, a piece of wampum, a pearl, or a sparkling stone. The Senecas, especially, liked that kind of finery. Andrew Hesselius wrote in his diary for August 23, 1721:

Among all the sorts of adornments I saw at any time worn by the savages of [the] five nations, no one is more absurd than the nose ornaments used by these Senikoes. The gristle between the nostrils they have bored through, and in this hole they have a small piece of brass wire in form of a ring from which they suspend a flat three-cornered sebano-stone [wampum bead] downwards of a breadth of two fingers. This stone is unceasingly dangling right before their mouth and the lips [so] that they cannot eat or drink without the greatest inconvenience unless they are to hold up the stone with one hand.¹⁵

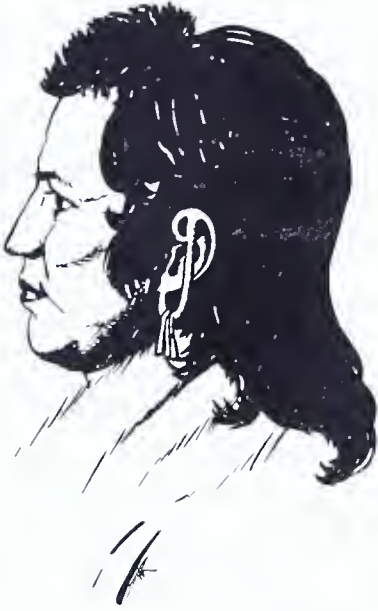
¹² *History, Manners, and Customs*, 206.

¹³ *Ibid.*

¹⁴ *History of the Mission*, II, 189.

¹⁵ Notes on a Visit to America, Am 211, Historical Society of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia.

The Delawares did not practice nose cutting, but it was fashionable among them to cut their ears. Indians have naturally long and well-shaped ears. Like the ancient Chinese artists who idealized their portraits by lengthening this feature, the Delawares tried to outdo nature by distending and cutting the ear lobes, as may be seen in St. Mémin's crayon portrait of a Delaware Indian. To the loose ends they attached pearls, feathers, flowers, and other such ornaments.



Cutting the ears was a painful operation, often ending in serious disfigurement. In summer the ear strips and loops might be torn by the bushes; in winter they were apt to be frozen and to drop off. Until late in the eighteenth century, after the fashion of ear cutting had been discontinued, Indians with torn ears were a common sight.



Delaware Villages and Houses

THE INDIANS OF PENNSYLVANIA, when the white man first knew them, were not nomads. Agriculture, the foundation of their society, attached them to the soil. Their cereal diet was supplemented, it is true, by fish, flesh, and fowl. That, in the absence of domestic herds, gave importance to the hunter. But before the coming of the white man, who created a demand for European goods and a fur trade (monstrous in its effects on native life) to satisfy it, the small hunting territories adjoining every village sufficed to meet each family's needs. Hunting, therefore, caused little disruption of normal living.

The Delaware confederation being very loose, the effective unit of government was the self-contained local community, which consisted of one or two small villages. In all Indian life the local community was important; among the Delawares it was supreme.

Unlike the Iroquois, the Delawares do not appear to have lived in palisaded towns. Their villages or hamlets were open, each containing perhaps half a dozen houses, sometimes in clusters, more often scattered over a comparatively wide area.

In choosing a village site, the Delawares looked for three things: a good water supply, good drainage, and warmth for the winter. They liked their homes to be near a lake or navigable stream, facing the sun on gently sloping river bottom lands or terraces above flood level.

They did not occupy their villages all year round. There were seasonal migrations, each family having its town and country house. Early in October, for instance, the men, sometimes accompanied by their wives, went off to cabins in their family hunting territories. These extended back from the village or from some well-known landmark as far, it might be, "as a man walks in a day" or a day and a half.

Such seasonal movements can be followed fairly closely. In spring there was planting to attend to in the small fields adjoining the village. In June and July, the men went into the woods for deer hunting. They were back in time for harvest and the Green Corn Festival. In September and October, they moved again to the hunting territory and remained there, on and off, for the winter. In January, deer hunting gave way to bear, fox, beaver, and raccoon hunting. In February, when the sap began to run, those fortunate enough to be in the sugar maple country, moved into the sugar bush, whole families together, selecting sites for sugar-boiling camps. In March or April, there was pigeon nesting. Back they all came to the village in time for spring planting.

The village was quiet during the day, few sounds being heard except that of women pounding corn in wooden mortars—a daily task—or the howl of an Indian dog. This latter was of a primitive breed, now extinct, which, though a true dog, did not bark, but howled like a wolf.

At night from the houses came the sound of voices engaged in storytelling or conversation. The Indians were past masters in the art of conversation, which provided entertainment and their best means of self-improvement. The voices were quiet, and one seldom heard the sharp dissonance of interruptions, such as is usual in white society. The Indians loved talking, and they often sat up all night over it.

Some evenings, when the villagers had gathered for a "social dance," a latecomer might hear from a distance the pad of "stomping" feet (a soft sound, not to be confused with the more boisterous "stamp-ing"), together with the pulse of the turtle rattle and the wistful, haunting melodies of songs the women sang in accompaniment.

Agriculture gave a measure of permanence to Delaware village life, but exhaustion of the soil (corn is very hard on it) and depletion of the firewood made it necessary every now and then to move the village. Among the Susquehannocks and Iroquois, who lived in large

towns and cultivated the soil more intensively, a move was necessary every ten or twenty years. The same came to be true of the Delawares after they had left Pennsylvania and set up large communities in Ohio. But it is doubtful if the Delawares in their early homeland on the Delaware River needed to move so often. Not only were their villages smaller than those of the Iroquois and with houses farther apart, but the Delawares fertilized their soil with fish scrap, fish being abundant in their home waters.

THE LONGHOUSE

There has been some question about the shape of Delaware houses, but evidence is strong that in early times the longhouse was the normal village type, built very much like that of the Susquehannocks and Iroquois, but with one difference. Whereas the Iroquois longhouse had a curved roof, like that of a Quonset hut, the Delaware longhouse had a peaked roof. It may be that in ancient times the Delawares built houses with arched roofs like those of the Virginia Indians painted by John White in the sixteenth century. But early European observers among the Lenni Lenape described their dwellings as having ridge roofs. Lindeström, who explored the Delaware Valley, 1654-1655, wrote of the ridged roof of the Delaware house. Zeisberger and Loskiel, a century later, said that the ridge roof distinguished the Delaware house from that of the Iroquois.

From outside, the Delaware longhouse looked like a low-slung English barn, the side walls rising not much above five feet. That made it wind resistant. The frame was constructed by driving poles into the ground like a palisade, and binding them to horizontal poles used as crosspieces. The whole was covered, inside and out, with long sheets of bark, overlapping like slates, everything being held in place with strips of bast (the inner bark of the linden tree) or hickory twigs, and with light poles crisscrossing on the outside to hold the bark firmly in place. The usual Delaware longhouse was, like the Susquehannock house, from about thirty feet to over a hundred feet in length, with a width of about twenty or twenty-five feet.

Bunks made of poles laid parallel with the sides and covered with bark lined the walls. Balsam boughs and reeds served for mattresses (very good ones), with covers of bearskin or deerskin. For a blanket, the sleeper used the same deerskin robe he had worn during the day.

Several families, all of one lineage, lived together: usually the matron with her husband, her unmarried children, and her married daughters with their husbands and children. Each family had its

own fire, with a smoke hole in the roof above it. Among the Iroquois, the smoke hole had a bark covering outside, which could be shifted with a stick from below, so that as the wind changed it was possible both to prevent the rain from coming in and to allow the smoke to get out. There were no windows, but there was a door at each end which could be covered with bearskin or bark.

Other Algonkian tribes of the neighborhood, however, are known to have built circular, beehive houses like those of the Monongahela people described on page 13. It has been supposed that the Delawares, too, must have used them. It is suggested by William W. Newcomb that the beehive house may have served the Delaware for his hunting lodge in winter.¹

Whatever its shape, the smaller house with only one fire came to be used more and more in Indian villages as time went on. By the eighteenth century, the longhouse of the Delawares had all but disappeared. Their typical dwelling by that time was a small rectangular log house, with moss or earth to stop the chinks and a covering of bark on the outside.

THE WAYSIDE CABIN

The wayside cabin used by the Delawares and other Indians when traveling was a simple structure, much like the Boy Scout lean-to. It could be put up in a few minutes. Four stakes were driven into the ground, about three feet high on one side and five or six feet high on the other, to make a sloping roof. The stakes had forked tops, across which poles were laid. To cover this frame, large sheets of bark were fastened on three sides and on the top. The high side, which faced away from the wind, was left open, and in front of it a fire was built. Balsam boughs or rushes made a soft mattress for the night. The cabin might have a length of six, nine, or more feet as desired; and it was wide enough to allow the men inside to sleep with their feet toward the fire.

On main trails the traveler might find many of these cabins. If it began to rain, he had only to stop at one of them, and turn up any bark he found lying on the ground to see that no snakes were harboring there. Then he spread fresh balsam on the ground, built a fire, and retired snugly until morning or until the rain ceased.

¹ *The Culture and Acculturation of the Delaware Indians* (Ann Arbor, 1956), 25.

THE SWEAT LODGE

Every community had its sweat lodges ("sweat ovens"), one for the men and another at the opposite end of town for the women. The sweat lodge was used by young and old as a cure for various diseases and for a general sharpening of the wits in preparation for some important conference.

The sweat lodge was usually built beside a stream. One end might be sunk into the bank, the rest of the structure being roofed by bark and earth. Steam was produced by pouring water on hot stones. Persons specially assigned to this task heated the stones (each about the size of a turnip) in a fire outside the lodge, bringing in fresh stones as needed to replenish the steam. The patient remained inside for half an hour or an hour, drinking a concoction specially prepared for him, while the sweat rolled off his skin. When he came out, he plunged into the river, or, in wintertime, rolled in the snow. Loskiel tells us that for the best effect this alternation of hot and cold was repeated three times.

The use of the sweat lodge was a community matter. A public crier made announcement when all was ready. Then the villagers trooped round, each with his kettle into which was poured a potion to promote perspiration and at the same time to quench thirst. Some persons brought their own potions for the cure of particular diseases.



Delaware Occupations

DIVISION OF LABOR

BETWEEN MEN AND WOMEN in the Indian world, there was a fair division of labor. "Delaware women," wrote Loskiel in his *History*, "live as well as the situation of an Indian will permit." The man, because of his greater physical strength and his freedom from the burden of child rearing and nursing, attended to the more strenuous and dangerous duties. He cleared the land, felled the trees (by girdling and then hacking them down with his stone ax), built and repaired the house. He made the fish dam, attached the "fish basket," and gathered the catch. At certain seasons of the year he went out hunting to provide food and clothing for the family. He made canoes, war clubs, bows, and arrows. He went to war to defend his home. But he left the management of the house to his wife and the chief matron of her lineage, and he listened to the advice of these women in matters of peace and war.

The Delaware woman was far from being a slave. She had a relatively higher, more respected position in the community than her

sister in Europe. She was complete mistress in her home. She owned the house, its equipment, and the fields attached to it. In case of divorce, she kept the children. In public affairs, her advice was powerful. "In terms of blood-money (the custom of payment to prevent the taking of blood-revenge)," writes John Witthoft in "The American Indian—Hunter," "a woman was worth twice as much as a man; where the family of a killer had to make formal payment to the family of the victim, Indian law determined that the sum must be doubled if the slain were a woman."¹

Her duties were commensurate with her privileges, and she bore her responsibilities without complaining. She nursed the children, made the pottery, tanned the hides, dressed the game her husband brought, kept the fire burning, made the bread, provided her husband and family with two good meals a day, and kept a kettle of soup on the fire for possible visitors. She gathered the firewood, fetched the water, and made clothing for herself and the family. She plowed the ground, planted the corn, cultivated it, gathered it, and ground it into flour or meal.

But the Indian woman with her corn-pounder and hoe is not a figure to be pitied. Her housekeeping was not exhausting. Household furniture in the longhouse consisted chiefly of earthenware, wood, and bark receptacles of different sizes for various uses: pounding corn, cooking, eating, storing. Gardening (farming in those days was little more) was everywhere looked upon as woman's work. It was believed that women had invented agriculture, and that the Corn Mother co-operated best with her own sex. Besides, the fields were small, the work was light. Tending the corn patch was a cheerful part of community life. The women sowed, cultivated, or reaped at their own time and their own speed, enjoying a neighborly chat with friends as they worked. In later years, as men's preoccupation with hunting and war grew less, the husband took on more and more of this "women's work" as his own, thus keeping the balance of labor even.

FOOD AND COOKING

The Delaware woman spent a good deal of time and ingenuity in the preparation of food. Though she is said to have yielded to the Iroquois woman in the fine art of moccasin decoration, she was unsurpassed as a cook. Her two meals a day were prepared with a nicety that astonished Europeans.

The staple foods were the Three Sisters: corn, beans, and squash. The species of squash they ate was what we call the pumpkin, though

¹ *Pennsylvania Game News*, XXIV, No. 2 (February, 1953), 15-16.

not the variety that goes into our Thanksgiving pies. The diet was not so narrow as it might seem to be. There were many other foods available, and these were combined with the Three Sisters to provide variety. Besides fish, flesh, and fowl, there were insects. The Moravians observed that fried locusts were enjoyed by the children. In addition to the staple vegetables, there were potatoes and wild peas. There were chestnuts, hickory nuts, hazelnuts. There were also wild grapes, wild plums, crab apples; cranberries, huckleberries, strawberries, blackberries, gooseberries, whortleberries, bilberries, raspberries. Of cranberries and crab apples they made preserves.

They tapped the maple trees and boiled the sap to syrup and sugar. There has been some question whether the white man learned the art of maple sugar making from the Indian or the Indian from the white man. Helen and Scott Nearing in *The Maple Sugar Book* assure us that the debt is to the Indian. Here is some of their evidence:

Marc Lescarbot, in his *Histoire de la Nouvelle France*, 1609, wrote that when the Indians were thirsty they got juice from the trees and distilled it into what he found to be "a sweet and very agreeable liquid." Sebastien Rasle, a missionary to the Abenakis, observed in *Lettres édifiantes et curieuses*, 1724, that the forest contained plenty of sugar in fluid form. The Indian women, he said, in spring "busy themselves in receiving it into vessels of bark, when it trickles from these trees; they boil it, and obtain from it a fairly good sugar." Robert Beverley in his *History and Present State of Virginia*, 1705, said that the Indians boiled eight pounds of sap down to one pound of sugar. He added: "Though this Discovery has not been made by the English above Twelve or Fourteen Years; yet it has been known among the Indians, longer than any now living can remember."²

Lewis Morgan saw evidence, in the religious festival known as the Maple Sugar Dance, of the antiquity of maple sugar making among the Indians.

Early European travelers in America found Indian sugar a great curiosity. They observed that Indians drew the sap from the trees into bark receptacles or hollow logs, and boiled the liquid by dropping in hot stones. The process could be speeded up in cold weather by letting the sap freeze in the container. When the ice, which was almost all water, was skimmed off, the syrup left behind was found to be more sugary.

Thomas Wildcat Alford, in telling of his youth among the Shawnees, described customs that were probably ancient also among the Dela-

² Helen and Scott Nearing, *The Maple Sugar Book* (New York, 1950), 22-25.

wares. Of sugar making he had this to say: "Sugar and syrup were made from sugar maple, but when our people were not in the country where sugar maple grew they substituted soft maple, box elder, and even hickory sap for the sugar maple sap, though of course the product was not so good."³

The Delawares used maple or other sugar in many ways, mixing it with their corn bread and even seasoning their meat with it. They sweetened melted bear's fat with a strong infusion of maple sugar, and dipped their roasted venison into it.

At home they were delicate in their eating, and the women were particular about cooking. Not only had they many recipes, but they were skilled in regulating their fires, selecting the right woods for different dishes and different tastes. Some Delawares liked their meat rare, some liked it well done. Lindeström tells us they ate their meat half cooked. Zeisberger, on the other hand, says: "Food which they prepare must be well cooked and well done; they do not like anything rare or raw. Meat and even fish must be so thoroughly cooked that they fall apart."⁴ It is not the time element that explains the discrepancy between these two reports, but local custom or private taste.

The Delawares were neat and cleanly in their cooking. "They often laugh at the white hunters," wrote Heckewelder, "for baking their bread in dirty ashes, and being alike careless of cleanliness when they broil their meat."⁵

They had many ways of preparing food. They roasted meat on wooden spits, boiled it in earthen pots, or broiled it on clean coals. Pumpkins they stewed in pots covered with large leaves to keep in the steam.

Indians made corn the basis of most of their meals. But they used corn of so many varieties, cooked in so many different ways and in such a multitude of combinations (with chopped meat, shredded fish, ground-up nuts, powdered sugar, and so on) that there was no monotony.

Loskiel tells us that both the Delawares and the Iroquois dressed Indian corn in twelve different ways:

1. Boiling it in the husk.
2. Parboiling it, rubbing off the husk, and boiling it again.
3. Roasting the whole ear in hot ashes as it came off the stalk.
4. Pounding it small and then boiling it soft.

³ Florence Drake, *Civilization: As Told to Florence Drake by Thomas Wildcat Alford* (Norman, Oklahoma, 1936), 41.

⁴ "History of the Indians," 14.

⁵ *History, Manners, and Customs*, 196.

5. Grinding it as fine as flour by means of a wooden mortar and pestle, clearing it from the husks, and making a thick pottage of it.
6. Kneading the flour with cold water, making a cake about a hand's-breadth round and an inch thick, enclosing this in leaves, and baking it in hot ashes under live coals. That was their bread.
7. Mixing dried bilberries with the flour to give the cakes better relish.
8. Chopping roasted or dried deer's flesh or sometimes smoked eels, and boiling this with the corn.
9. Boiling coarsely ground corn with fresh meat.
10. Letting unripe corn swell in boiling water, drying it, and laying it by for later use as soup or salad.
11. Roasting the whole corn when well grown but still full of juice.
12. Roasting corn in hot ashes till it became thoroughly brown; then pounding it to fine flour, mixing it with sugar, and pressing it forcibly in a bag.

When hunting or on the warpath, they carried with them a supply of this last, which they called *psindamoakan*. A mouthful or two—equivalent to one or two tablespoonfuls—was sufficient nourishment for a day.

No table was set for an Indian meal. The food was placed on the ground, the diner sat on a rush mat. His equipment was a wooden spoon, a stone knife, and a clay bowl. Water was the principal drink. Loskiel reports that the Delawares prepared also a drink of dried blueberries, sugar, and water, which he found "very agreeable."

Etiquette based on religious scruples forbade the Indian's throwing the bone to the dog. Instead, he dropped it into the fire. There was a prejudice against eating ground hog, hare, or wildcat; and no Delaware would dream of killing, much less of eating, Grandfather Rattlesnake.

John Heckewelder one day questioned the wisdom of this rattlesnake taboo and told an Indian friend that white men killed rattlers. When the Indian inquired if, in consequence of this "declaration of war," the snakes did not sometimes retaliate by killing white men, Heckewelder had to admit that this was so. "No wonder," said the Indian. "You have yourselves to blame." He warned Heckewelder to leave the rattlesnakes alone and not to carry this "war," with the danger of reprisals, into the Indian country where up to that time the rattlesnakes and their "grandchildren" had been on good terms.

The Delawares preserved food by drying it in the sun or over a fire and then storing it in a bark-lined pit.

AGRICULTURE

The Delawares did not farm as intensively as the Iroquois, but nevertheless it was chiefly their crops that fed them. The fertility of the river-bottom fields they had cleared is attested by the eagerness of white men to possess them. Frequently, warrants for survey (as we read them now in the Commonwealth's Bureau of Land Records in Harrisburg) were worded "to include the Indian field."

Corn, the principal crop, was not broadcast but planted in hills about two and a half feet apart. It was cultivated by earthing-up and weeding with short-handled hoes made of deer shoulder blades or tortoise shells. There is evidence that the Delawares fertilized the ground with fish scrap. But there was no rotation of crops. Instead, there was rotation of villages. When the soil was exhausted, the whole village moved to new quarters a few miles away. That is why "Old Town" is so familiar a name on early maps of Pennsylvania: Chartier's Old Town, Conemaugh Old Town, Kickenapaulin's Old Town, and so on.

HUNTING

Before European fashions put a premium on beaver, the animals most sought by the Delawares were deer and bear, which provided essentials in food and clothing. Other creatures were eaten, too, except those protected by taboo. The hare, wildcat, ground hog, and rattlesnake have been noted already in this category. To these must be added the wolf.

The source of this interdiction against killing wolves is to be found in the primal myths of creation, birth, and death, in which the wolf played a heroic but tragic role. He was the first to taste death, after having drawn the Munsees out of the great cave in which they had been confined in the interior of the earth.⁶

The wolf taboo at a later time was to give great trouble to the Moravian missionaries. When the wolves became ravenous in the vicinity of mission villages, the only way the Christian Delawares could protect their flocks without scandalizing their non-Christian neighbors was to dig pits and let the wolves fall in and kill themselves.

The Delaware hunter sometimes worked alone, sometimes with a group. Collective hunting was thus described by Lindeström:

⁶ See Heckewelder's explanation, pages 79-80.

When now the sachem [chief] wants to arrange his hunt, then he commands his people [to take a position] close together in a circle of $\frac{1}{2}$, 1 or 2 miles [Swedish or German miles], according to the number of people at his command. In the first place each one roots up the grass in the position, [assigned to him] in the circumference, to the width of about 3 or 4 ells, so that the fire will not be able to run back, each one then beginning to set fire to the grass, which is mightily ignited, so that the fire travels away, in towards the center of the circle, which the Indians follow with great noise, and all the animals which are found within the circle, flee from the fire and the cries of the Indians, traveling away, whereby the circle through its decreasing is more and more contracted towards the center. When now the Indians have surrounded the center with a small circle, so that they mutually cannot do each other any harm, then they break loose with guns and bows on the animals which they then have been blessed with, that not one can escape and thus they get a great multitude of all kinds of animals which are found there.⁷

To attract the deer, "calls" were made of cedar wood. If a hunter could not get within range of his prey, he would follow it, if need be, for a whole day.

FISHING

The Delawares had many ways of catching fish. They used fishhooks of dried birds' claws. They used dragnets which had been knitted by the women with thread from the wild hemp. They trapped fish behind dams, catching them there with their bare hands or shooting them with bow and arrow. Sometimes they placed a "fish basket," or trap, below the sluice and collected the fish as they came through. They also speared fish by torchlight.

TRADE

From archaeological evidence it would appear that trade between distant Indian communities was brisker in ancient times than it was in the late prehistoric period. Spear points from the jasper quarries at Macungie in Lehigh County are said to have been found in New England. When the bow and arrow replaced the spear, however, the jasper trade dwindled and died. Small triangular arrowheads could be manufactured anywhere from local stone, and jasper lost its importance in the arms race.

The fur trade changed everything. With the coming of the white man, firearms became a necessity for survival, and the Indian could

⁷ *Geographia Americae*, 213-14.

get them only in exchange for furs. The first permanent trading post in these northern latitudes was established by the French in 1603 at Tadoussac on the St. Lawrence River; but even before that time European goods had been reaching the Indians from trading vessels along the Atlantic coast. John Smith in 1608, the year of Champlain's founding of Quebec, observed the Susquehannocks to be already in possession of traders' goods.

The fur trade was then still in its infancy. When it reached maturity a few years later, it dominated Indian life, drawing all able-bodied men into lengthy excursions, far from the family hunting grounds, in search of deer, beaver, otter, raccoon, fox, and wildcat. The skins of these animals were exchanged for firearms and metal tools of all kinds, as well as for cloth, brass kettles, and ornaments.

Unfortunately the fur trade did more than change the native economy. It brought fierce competition between the tribes. National wars of a ferocity hitherto unknown ensued, in which whole populations were destroyed or uprooted and their territories turned into hunting grounds for the victors.

PHYSICIANS

There were two kinds of medicine men: *physicians*, who had a wide knowledge of medicinal herbs and who could set bones and cure wounds with great skill; and *conjurers*, who claimed (and usually believed themselves) to possess supernatural powers which enabled them to detect evil spirits in men's bodies and to cast them out. Both roles, that of physician and that of conjurer, were sometimes played by the same person, and most Indians had a good knowledge of herbs.

In the eighteenth century good Indian physicians were respected by all men, white and brown. Heckewelder's sciatica was relieved, as he tells us, by the application of an Indian poultice. Andreas Hesselius reports that his young son was cured of worms by an Indian remedy. Dr. Benjamin Rush made note of Indian cures. Many Indian medicines have found their way into modern medical practice.

The *Materia Medica* of the Indians [wrote Heckewelder] consists of various roots and plants known to themselves, the properties of which they are not fond of disclosing to strangers. They make considerable use of the barks of trees, such as the white and black oak, the white walnut, of which they make pills, the cherry, dogwood, maple, birch, and several others. They prepare and compound these medicines in different ways, which they keep a profound secret.⁸

⁸ *History, Manners, and Customs*, 224.

Wounds and external injuries [wrote Zeisberger] the Indians treat very successfully, knowing what applications to make. In the curing of those suffering from snake-bite, they are particularly capable. For the bite of every variety of snake they have a special *Beson*.⁹

For headache they lay a piece of white walnut bark on the temples, toothache is treated by placing the same kind of bark on the cheek over the tooth that gives trouble. The bark is very heating and burns the skin in a short time, often affording relief. . . . This bark pounded fine and boiled to the consistency of a strong lye stops the flow of blood when applied to a fresh wound, even though an artery may have been ruptured, prevents swelling and heals the wound rapidly.¹⁰

In gathering herbs, as Gladys Tantaquidgeon tells us in *A Study of Delaware Indian Medicine Practice and Folk Beliefs*, the medicine man followed a certain ritual. He left untouched the first plant, placing beside it in the ground to the east a little tobacco. Then he lighted his pipe and, as the smoke ascended, addressed a prayer of intercession to the Creator and the spiritual forces that govern vegetation. That done, he looked for other plants of the same kind and gathered as many as he needed. When later he prepared the plants for use, he prayed to the Creator to bless them and make them effective.

CONJURORS AND SORCERERS

In Heckewelder's opinion, the Delawares' greatest weakness was superstitious fear, the "apprehension of an occult and unknown power." They believed in charms, "deadening substances," and all sorts of magic formulas. As a result, they were easily preyed upon by what the Munsees called *Medeu* (conjurors) who exacted ruinous fees from patients by the pretense of expelling evil spirits. In case of serious illness, the conjurors sometimes continued their visits until the patient's property was exhausted, when they declared his disease to be incurable. Heckewelder thought the death of Shingas' wife resulted from her turning from proper physicians to these conjurors.

WITCHES

The Delawares, like the rest of the world, believed in witches. Zeisberger, whose disbelief in such things was easily shaken, is our source for some of the best Indian folklore about the black art. The Delawares, he reported in 1769, had acquired this art from the Nanti-

⁹ "History of the Indians," 25.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, 148-49.

cokes and, not knowing the potency of the spells the Nanticokes sold them, sometimes in their eagerness to revenge themselves upon individuals, destroyed whole towns (so it was said) by poisoning the spring water. Sometimes they took their "witchcraft" to a nearby hill, put the magical stuff in a hollow tree trunk or rock crevice, and let the wind take it to the doomed town. Everything there, it was believed, became contaminated. That is why, Zeisberger says, when plague struck a town, the Indians cleared out at once, thinking they were bewitched. The Delaware prophet Wangomen (Zeisberger's rival and enemy at Goschgoschink on the upper Allegheny) owed his great influence over the people to their belief that he possessed "witchcraft" and that their lives were in his power.

The punishment for witchcraft was death: not by burning at the stake as in Europe nor by hanging as in New England, but by one swift blow of the hatchet.

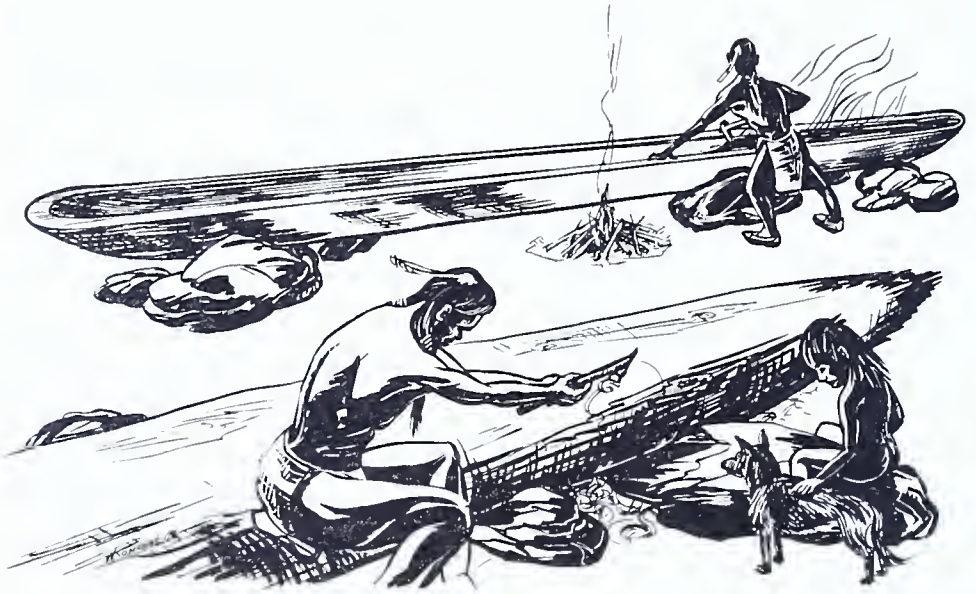
THE MEDICINE BUNDLE

The medicine bundle was sacred, so sacred that it was seldom allowed to be seen and almost never opened. It was used by physicians, conjurors, and the laity to cure diseases. For that reason it is discussed here rather than in the chapter on Delaware religion.

Nearly everyone had a medicine bundle. As the name suggests, it was a small buckskin bag containing medicinal roots and a variety of other objects—perhaps a feather, an animal tooth, a magic stone—things that had been suggested in dreams by one's Guardian Spirit.

"The medicine bundle," writes Gladys Tantaquidgeon, "is the most highly cherished material possession of a chief, warrior or medicine man."¹¹ Through it the possessor could communicate with his Guardian Spirit. A medicine man might ask this Supernatural for the diagnosis of a difficult case; a hunter, for assistance in tracking the game; a warrior, for the discovery of his enemy's position; a chief, for clearer insight into his people's needs.

¹¹ *Delaware Indian Medicine Practice and Folk Beliefs* (Harrisburg, 1942), 22.



Delaware Travel

INDIAN TRAILS

EXCEPT FOR A FEW YEARS of our nineteenth-century canal boom, Pennsylvania's best transportation has always been by land. Her rivers have, on the whole, been more of an obstacle than an aid to getting about. That was certainly true during Indian days. Neither in a north-and-south nor in an east-and-west direction did they offer the canoeman an easy passage through the mountains. Canoes might descend the Susquehanna from the Iroquois country well enough during the spring flood; but at other times great stretches of it were rocky and treacherous, difficult to ascend against the current, dangerous to descend with it. The Susquehanna West Branch and the Juniata gave access to the middle ranges of the Appalachian Mountains, but the traveler, when he reached the Allegheny Front (west of Bedford and Hollidaysburg), had to leave his canoe and climb over high ridges before he found navigable water flowing into the Allegheny and Ohio.

As if to compensate for that, Pennsylvania had plenty of good trail country. Geological changes in earlier ages had left a legacy of wind

gaps (old abandoned water courses) which offered low-level crossings of some otherwise formidable ranges. Except for an occasional forest of white pine and hemlock, which vied with each other to blot out the sun and earned from discouraged European travelers the name "Shades of Death," the woods for the most part were open. Some streams difficult to navigate—Pine Creek, for instance, and the Sinnemahoning—cut passageways through the mountains which could be used by early travelers, just as they are used today by our railroads.

It seems a fair inference from what we know of early Indian habitations that the Indian paths of the eighteenth century—the period from which comes our fullest knowledge of Indian travel—were much the same as those that had been in use during earlier centuries. If we are correct in this, we may say that the Indian's road map (if he had had one) would have shown almost as intricate a crisscross of travelways as are found on our road maps today.

There were paths for all weathers, wet and dry, hot and cold; and for all kinds of people, hunters, warriors, messengers (runners), diplomats, and even family parties crossing the mountains to visit friends. Most of the paths were narrow, about eighteen inches wide, just sufficient for persons moving in single file. A few paths, notably those crossing the mountains of Greene County (from the Ohio Valley to the Monongahela) were wide and well-worn buffalo traces. In the Iroquois country some trails were wide enough for two men to walk abreast.

It was only in the more settled regions that paths were kept clear of brush and fallen trees. In the lonelier mountain regions, windfall made necessary a constant crawling over and under tree trunks or walking round them. Sometimes in the wake of a hurricane the windfall was so bad that travelers could not get through at all and had to take another route. At such times even Indians could get lost.

Where possible, Indian paths avoided water, heavy underbrush (especially the mountain laurel), and steep ascents; but in a pinch all these obstacles were met and overcome for the sake of some compensating advantage. The Wyalusing Path, a short route between the two branches of the Susquehanna, crossed Muncy Creek more than thirty times; the well-graded Minisink, Frankstown, and Raystown paths passed through the Shades of Death; and the Conemaugh Path, by ascending the Allegheny Mountain at a place too steep for our modern traffic, was several miles shorter than the present highway between Bedford and Johnstown.

In some places the path ran along the summit of a ridge, but it avoided mountain spines like the Blue Mountain (the Kittatinny)

of the Eighteenth Century



in eastern Pennsylvania, where every few miles the range is cut by a deep gap which the traveler would have had to drop into and climb out of again. The famous Appalachian Trail ("from Maine to Georgia") crosses from the Delaware to the Susquehanna by a route not used by Indian travelers. It was devised for sport by modern white men.

The coming of Europeans caused the relocation of some Indian highways. The so-called Warriors Path will serve as an example. At one time the section of the trail which was known to early settlers as the Virginia Path ran southwest from Paxtang (Harrisburg) to cross the Potomac at the mouth of the Conococheague. Settlers moving into Cumberland Valley resented the Indians' crossing of their clearings. To avoid trouble, Indian war parties and embassies took a route farther west, running south from Standing Stone (Huntingdon) to cross the Potomac at Opessah's Town (Oldtown, Maryland). Later we find the Catawba Path, another version of the Warriors Path, crossing Pennsylvania on the west side of the Alleghenies and running south through Connellsville and Uniontown. When in 1767 Mason and Dixon ran their line west of the Monongahela River, the Iroquois stopped them at a branch of the Catawba Path which crossed the nearby Dunkard Creek in Greene County.

Trails led from one to another of the main fords or river crossings. The Allegheny Path, for instance, ran from any one of several fords of the Schuylkill at what is now Philadelphia to the Susquehanna ford at Paxtang (Harrisburg), and from there to fords of the Allegheny and the Monongahela at the Forks of the Ohio (Pittsburgh). Most trails "kept their level" well enough, twisting through water gaps and wind gaps to avoid too much climbing. Despite these windings, the paths were so well routed that they were shorter, take them as a whole, than the corresponding roads we use today.

Many of our modern highways follow the general course of Indian paths, but differences in travel objectives and weight of traffic (today's trucks as compared with yesterday's moccasined men and women) have made it impossible for our roads to follow the old paths for any distance.

North, east, south, and west, Pennsylvania's main paths connected with Indian highways of continental reach. Good trails sped the Iroquois warrior south toward the Cherokee country and brought Shawnee refugees from North Carolina to the Delaware Water Gap. Trails ran from the Atlantic to the Pacific. Trails connected Hudson Bay with the Gulf of Mexico. A path from Philadelphia to Conestoga (near Lancaster) and the Shenandoah Valley passed through Virginia

and Tennessee to the Cumberland Gap—a distance of about eight hundred miles. The Allegheny Path from Philadelphia made connections at what is now Independence, Missouri, with predecessors of the Santa Fe Trail to New Mexico and of the Oregon Trail to the Pacific. Several Pennsylvania paths made connections with the Natchez Trace by way of the Shenandoah Valley, the Holston Valley, and Avery's Trace from Knoxville to French Lick (Nashville), where the Chickasaw Path or Natchez Trace took off.

The peacetime Indian traveler of the eighteenth century, who was probably not very different from his ancestor of the sixteenth, has been well described for us by David Zeisberger:

On their journeys they are never in haste, for they are everywhere at home and whithersoever they wander they find sustenance in the forest. Therefore, if a white man travels with them it is wisest that he be content not to hasten but accommodate himself to their movements. In the morning they do not break camp early, not until they have eaten heartily, by which time the sun has usually been above the horizon two or three hours. Thereafter, they proceed very steadily until near sundown, when they go into camp. In rainy weather they peel bast from the trees and speedily build a hut, that is, a roof supported by four posts, under which they remain comfortably dry. This they do not only in summer but also in winter, at which time they know what trees to peel.¹

When traveling any distance on foot, the Indian often carried a pack on his back. Men wore the packstrap slung over the chest; women, over the forehead. What saved Shickellamy, the Iroquois "half king," from death in 1737, when he slipped on the edge of a cliff above Lycoming Creek, was the catching of his packstrap on a bare tree branch.

CANOES

The canoe, which could on occasion provide the Indian with swift and silent passage, was not so much used in Pennsylvania as the romantic reader would like to think. For one thing, Pennsylvania's streams were not suitable for through travel between east and west, since the Allegheny Ridge set up a gigantic river block. For another, Pennsylvania's open forests made land travel so easy in most places that canoes were less necessary than, for instance, in New England where the forests were denser. More important still was the fact that the canoe birch, from which the northern Algonkians made the lightest and (for its size) the most efficient watercraft known to man,

¹ "History of the Indians," 22.

did not grow in Pennsylvania. Our Indians, therefore, unless they bartered for the northern product, had to be content with the dugout and the elm-bark canoe.

The dugout (of cedar, poplar, sycamore, tulip, or even walnut) took days to manufacture. A good tree having been selected, a fire was built round it. When the fire had eaten well into the trunk, stone axes were used to bring the tree down. Fire and ax were again applied to cut the trunk to the required length. Stone axes shaped the vessel from the outside, while the inside was hollowed by burning the wood and chipping it out with a stone adze. The dugout was unsinkable. It took rough water and did not split open when it struck a rock; but it was awkward to navigate and almost impossible to carry.

Canoes were also made of bark from the elm, black oak, or hickory. Of these, the elm-bark canoe was the favorite. It was made by carefully stripping from the tree—some time after the sap had risen—a single sheet of bark the length of the proposed craft, bending it with the smooth side out, cutting it at the quarters to give it shape, sewing it with bast, and providing gunwales, thwarts, ribs, and stems of maple, hickory, or oak.

Elm-bark canoes were clumsy to paddle, unseaworthy in white water, and too heavy for the long portages that separated the Allegheny drainage from the Susquehanna. But they were useful for swift travel with the spring freshets and for the transportation of heavy goods. The name "Canoe Place" is often found on old maps, as at the present Port Allegany on the portage between Sinnemahoning Creek and the Allegheny River, or at Cherry Tree on the portage between the West Branch of the Susquehanna and Two Lick Creek. "Canoe Place" meant the head of canoe navigation. It also meant the place where new canoes could be built for the down-river journey.



Delaware Warfare

WHEN THE DELAWARES first came into view, they were not a warlike people. They could hardly be, with so little organization and discipline. They had no central "fire" or national council. The local community was supreme, as though the need of concerted military action was not thought of. In 1633 they seem to have offered little resistance to the Susquehannocks, who drove them east across the Delaware River. In later years, after European trade had sharpened economic rivalries among the Indians and set up everywhere a struggle for national survival, the Delawares tightened their organization and in the careers of Captain Jacobs, Shingas ("the Terrible"), and Captain Pipe proved that their warriors could be as good as any. But before the coming of the white man, it is doubtful if the Delawares conducted anything more extensive than locally organized family raids to avenge the deaths of kinsmen.

The tactics used in such raids were the norm of most Indian warfare: surprise, destruction, the seizure of prisoners, and retreat. These are what today are called *commando tactics*. The Delawares used them

throughout the French and Indian War. The Iroquois, though they too used them, were capable also of larger strategic conceptions. They could conduct wide evolutions in the woods without losing control of their forces. In 1649 they assembled, unsuspected by their enemies, an army of a thousand warriors in the heart of the Huron country and demonstrated a power of co-ordinated attack that demoralized their enemies. In 1689 they paralyzed New France with an invasion carried out by 1,500 men who destroyed Lachine and reached the gates of Montreal.

Volunteers for Delaware expeditions were recruited at war dances. Their early weapons were the war club and spear, the latter rendered more deadly by a sling-lever device known as the spear thrower. It was not until comparatively late in their development, perhaps about two thousand years ago, that the bow and arrow replaced the spear. In this connection, it is interesting to remember that most of the projectile points found in our fields today are spearheads rather than arrowheads. Archaeologists tell us that the small triangular point, which was formerly thought to be a distinctively Iroquoian weapon, was in fact used as an arrowhead by all Indians east of the Rockies.

The sharp, high-pitched war whoop (variously called also the death halloo, death whoop, death cry, and scalp cry) was not confined to battle. Warriors returning from an expedition repeated the cry to indicate the number of scalps and prisoners they had taken.

PRISONERS

The capture of prisoners was a main objective of most Indian raids. Matrons sometimes sent their young men on the warpath with instructions to bring home replacements for deceased relatives. When the warriors returned, the disposal of prisoners was left largely to the matrons to determine. But the general public had rights, too. A prisoner's running the gantlet gave the people an opportunity to test his mettle and his prospective worth as a citizen.

George Henry Loskiel has described for us the custom of running the gantlet:

The warriors, upon their approach to the first town in their own country, repeat the death-whoop, according to the number of scalps, trophies, or prisoners in their possession. Upon this signal, men, women, and children, run out to meet them, placing themselves in two rows. The warriors step forward into the midst, with the scalp-poles and prisoners, and force the latter to dance for the amusement of the spectators. An house or post is then shown them in the village, to which they are ordered

to go. As soon as they set out, the people begin to strike at them with switches, clubs, hatchets, or their fists. If they gain the house or post, though ever so bruised and bloody, they are perfectly safe. Indians acquainted with this barbarous custom, escape great part of these cruelties, by running towards the mark with all their might. Female prisoners are frequently rescued by the women, who take them between their ranks, and carry them to the town.¹

Final decision on what to do with a captive was usually made by the matron to whom he was presented. If a white prisoner was to be adopted, Zeisberger tells us that his head was "shorn in Indian fashion, only a little hair remaining on the crown," and his face was painted red. If, on the other hand, he was to be burned, his face was painted black.

Stories of Indian captivities and tortures supplied the most popular reading, next to the Bible, of most Americans during the adolescent years of this nation and so helped to draw the people of thirteen separate colonies together in recognition of a common danger.

Different peoples have different fashions in cruelty as well as in dress. It horrified white men to know that Indians in the excitement of war tortured some of their prisoners. It horrified Indians to know that white men ill-treated Indian women and sold their children into slavery. Today, as we look back upon Indian tortures, all of us—Indians and white men alike—are ashamed that humanity should have sunk so low. We are no less ashamed when we read of the tortures that were part of the normal judicial process in "civilized" countries as late as the seventeenth century—tortures used to extort the "confessions" that sent many innocent persons to the stake.

The Indian's respect for the person of woman, even in time of war, was well known. "Bad as these savages are," wrote General James Clinton in 1779, "they never violate the chastity of any woman, their prisoner."²

It is a mistake to suppose that the Indians put all captives to death. Most of the women and children and many of the men were adopted into Indian families, where they were treated with as much kindness as if they were of the same flesh and blood. In return, adopted prisoners often became so much attached to the Indians who adopted them that they were reluctant to return to "civilization."

Thomas Proctor [Procter] in his diary for April 9, 1791, tells of meeting a white prisoner, Nicholas "Deamhoat" (Demoot) at Venango:

¹ *History of the Mission*, I, 149.

² Quoted by J. N. B. Hewitt, "Status of Woman in Iroquois Polity Before 1784," Smithsonian Institution, *Report for 1932* (Washington, 1933), 483.

He was dressed in the Indian garb, and what I was grieved to see, his ears were cut around and each hung with a considerable weight of lead, designed to stretch them to a proper length. He acquainted me that his friends lived in Schenectady; his father lately dying, left him a considerable sum of money, I urged him to go around with me on my tour, and on our arrival at Philadelphia, I would give him decent apparel, and subsistence while going to his relatives, but he declined it, saying that he could not live so agreeable with the white people as with the Indians.⁸

The Delawares were less ruthless than some other Indians in the treatment of prisoners, although the burning to death of Colonel William Crawford in 1782 has been remembered against them. Colonel Crawford was captured at the Battle of Upper Sandusky. One of his officers, Colonel David Williamson (who escaped), had been responsible for the massacre of some ninety defenseless Christian Indians, most of them women and children, a few months before at Gnadenhütten, Ohio. Crawford himself had taken part in the "Squaw Campaign," when American militia attacked peaceful Delaware camps on the Shenango. On that occasion a brother of Captain Pipe, a Delaware war chief, was killed and his mother was wounded. The Delawares regarded the burning of Crawford as a judicial execution, and Captain Pipe, when appealed to, declined to intervene.

⁸ *Pennsylvania Archives*, 2d Series, IV, 571.



Delaware Government and Social Organization

GOVERNMENT

IT IS DIFFICULT for the modern American, living under a strong federal government, and within closely defined geographical boundaries, to understand early Delaware government. The bounds of the Lenni Lenape territory were nebulous. There was no Delaware "nation" in the modern sense. There were, however, contiguous communities of Indians in what is now Pennsylvania, New York, New Jersey, and Delaware who spoke dialects of the same Algonkian tongue, shared much the same history and culture, had the same enemies, and, in short, had a sufficient feeling of identity to call themselves *Lenni Lenape*, "Real People," as distinct from all others.

The social and political organization of the early Delawares is not fully known, but it is safe to say that the basic unit of both was

the maternal "lineage," a group of people descended from a common ancestress, consisting exclusively of relatives through the female line.

Each lineage had its chief or sachem.

. . . Their Government is by Kings [wrote William Penn], which they call *Sachema*, and those by Succession, but always of the Mothers side; for Instance, the Children of him that is now King, will not succeed, but his Brother by the Mother, or the Children of his Sister, whose Sons (and after them the Children of her Daughters) will reign; for no Woman inherits; the Reason they render for this way of Descent, is, that their Issue may not be spurious.

. . . Every King hath his Council, and that consists of all the Old and Wise men of his Nation, which perhaps is two hundred People: nothing of Moment is undertaken, be it War, Peace, Selling of Land or Traffick, without advising with them; and which is more, with the Young Men too. 'Tis admirable to consider, how Powerful the Kings are, and yet how they move by the Breath of their People. I have had occasion to be in Council with them upon Treaties for Land, and to adjust the terms of Trade; their Order is thus: The King sits in the middle of an half Moon, and hath his Council, the Old and Wise on each hand; behind them, or at a little distance, sit the younger Fry, in the same figure.¹

"King" was not a proper Indian title, as Colonel James Smith, who was captured by the Indians in 1755, has reminded us:

I have often heard of Indian Kings, but never saw any.—How any term used by the Indians in their own tongue, for the chief man of a nation, could be rendered King, I know not. The chief of a nation is neither a supreme ruler, monarch or potentate—He can neither make war or peace, leagues or treaties—He cannot impress soldiers, or dispose of magazines—He cannot adjourn, prorogue or dissolve a general assembly, nor can he refuse his assent to their conclusions, or in any manner controul them. . . . The chief of a nation has to hunt for his living, as any other citizen—²

The sachem had, nevertheless, great influence. He represented his lineage in treaties, in community councils, and (after the coming of the white men) in the sale of land. It was his responsibility to see that the death of a member of the lineage was avenged, or, if one of his own people had been the killer, to arrange for the payment of blood money to buy his kinsman's life. He served as chairman in council meetings. If he happened to be head chief of the community,

¹ Myers (ed.), *Narratives of Early Pennsylvania*, 234-35.

² William M. Darlington (ed.), *An Account of the Remarkable Occurrences in the Life and Travels of Col. James Smith . . .* (Cincinnati, 1870), 147.

he called public meetings. He also discharged certain ceremonial functions at the various thanksgiving festivals scattered through the year.

Above the lineage, the next unit of government was the local community, sometimes referred to in literature as the "tribe." Among the Delawares, the community was self-governing, and it owned the soil. Early land purchases by Pennsylvania authorities were usually made by contract with the chiefs of these communities.

The community had no police to enforce the law. The Delawares, indeed, had no law at all in the statute-book sense. But individual Indians seldom violated the community's code. If they did violate it, they submitted to punishment without a murmur. "Their honor was their law."³

In the seventeenth century, the landowning local community was the effective unit of government. There is evidence (challenged, however, by some recent scholars) that there were other, larger divisions resting on a geographical base and drawing the inhabitants into a kind of regional loyalty. These divisions are not known to have had a formal government, but their members possessed a sense of belonging, like people in the same block in a modern housing development.

These were the Unamis, Unalachtigos, and Munsees. The three names, if we accept Daniel G. Brinton's interpretation of them, tell us approximately where they were situated. The Munsees, "Mountain People," lived in the Upper Delaware basin among Pennsylvania's Poconos and the mountains of New Jersey. The Unamis, "Down-River People," lived on the Lower Delaware and its tributaries from the Lehigh to the mouth of the Schuylkill. The Unalachtigos, "People near the Ocean," are less easy to identify, but they are thought to have lived in eastern Delaware and southern New Jersey.

In the second half of the eighteenth century, when the Delawares under Netawatwees (Newcomer) staged their short-lived renaissance in Ohio, these divisions received a firmer political shape. Old regional loyalties, it would appear, provided new anchors for refugees whose other associations had been broken. Each of these three "tribes" now had its own chief and council. It had also, if the missionaries Zeisberger and Heckewelder have reported correctly, an animal eponym (borrowed, it may be, from its predominant clan): Unami, the Turtle; Unalachtigo, the Turkey; Munsee, the Wolf. In time the three dwindled to two. The Unalachtigos disappeared, being absorbed by the Unamis, with whose speech their own was almost identical. Today,

* Christian Cukler to Lyman C. Draper, February 20, 1863, Draper MSS, 6E, 32 (Brady and Wetzel Papers), State Historical Society of Wisconsin (microfilm). Punctuation and spelling have been corrected.

as Nekatcit (Nicodemus Peters of Smoothtown on the Six Nations Reserve, Ontario) once observed, there are two kinds of Delawares: the Unamis on the one hand and the Munsees on the other; "but we call one another brothers."

It is not known how old these divisions were, nor whether there were others whose identities have been lost. The whole subject is under scholarly debate.

Delaware tribal identities have been fluctuating ever since Penn's day. There has been a constant movement of small groups leaving the parent stem and becoming known for the place at which they settled. So, as bands of Delawares moved west, the Brandywine Indians, the Schuylkill Indians, and many other groups were mistakenly treated in literature as if they were independent tribes.

"INDIAN ARCHIVES"

The Delawares had a reverence for their past, and they found ways to preserve it in memory. They could not do this by means of books or clay tablets, because they had no letters. Their pictographs helped them to recall events, but were not suitable for the recording of anything complex. Even in the famous and much debated *Walam Olum*, which is said to recount the history of the Delawares for ages past, the pictographs are no more than aids to the memory. It is in the accompanying Indian-language text that we find whatever of significance the *Walam Olum* possesses as history. (For the text of the *Walam Olum* and a discussion of its authenticity, see *Walam Olum or Red Score: The Migration Legend of the Lenni Lenape or Delaware Indians*, published by the Indiana Historical Society, Indianapolis, 1954.) The principal substitute for writing was the trained memories of chiefs and other specially appointed persons, who memorized the facts about old treaties and historical events. They were aided by wampum strings or belts, sometimes with inwoven figures to serve as memory guides, which were handed down from generation to generation. The Wampum Keeper was what today would be called the State Archivist. Among the Delawares he was usually an honored chief, as, for instance, Sassoonan, who was also known as Olumapies, Keeper of the Wampum.

WAMPUM

"Wampum" comes from an Algonkian word, *wampumpeak*, meaning "strings of white shell beads." There were two kinds of wampum: white and black, both usually made from the hard-shelled clam or

the whelk. Black wampum was made from the thick, purple part of the shell; being more difficult to make, it was twice as valuable as white wampum.

It was not until after the white man had brought steel awls by which to perforate small cylindrical beads that the art of making wampum belts became highly developed and that wampum became a medium of exchange. "Before the Europeans came to North America," wrote Loskiel, "the Indians used to make their strings of wampom chiefly of small pieces of wood of equal size, stained either black or white."⁴ A few natural shells were also used, shells of a kind that could, with only slight modification, be strung lengthwise. But these were too clumsy to use in making the delicate figures that are familiar to us in historic wampum.

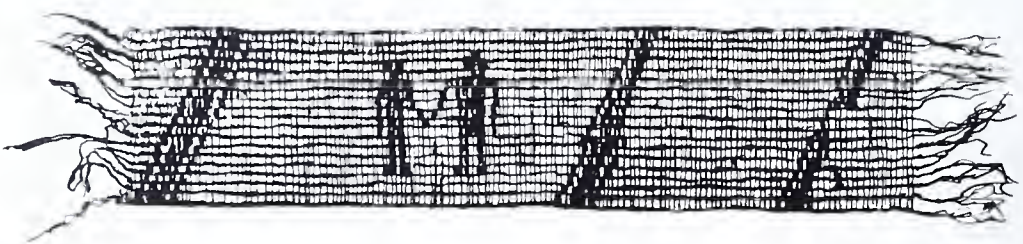
Wampum was sacred. For a speaker in council to hold a wampum belt in his hand was like a white man's laying his hand on the Bible and taking the oath. "What Indians say with hand upon the wampum belt is true," said Chief William Dewaserage Loft (Sharenkhowane of the Mohawks).

In public debate, strings or belts of wampum served to refresh the memory. The speaker held in his hand as many belts as there were separate matters to be discussed. As he completed each division of his talk, he put a belt of wampum on a pole which had been laid across two crotched sticks before him. The speaker who replied, took up each belt in turn and dealt with the particular point it betokened. The touch and sight of the belts helped both speaker and audience to follow the argument.

White wampum was a symbol of peace; black wampum, of grief or death. In historic times wampum belts usually had designs inwoven in dark beads on a white ground to indicate the terms of a treaty or the substance of a message.

The most famous belt in Pennsylvania is the Penn Wampum Belt of eighteen rows containing some three thousand beads. According to an unverified tradition, it records a treaty held late in 1682 under the Shackamaxon Elm at Philadelphia between the Delaware Chief Tamanend and William Penn, which promised peace between their

⁴ *History of the Mission*, I, 26.



peoples as long as grass grows and water runs. It shows an Indian as host (the larger figure in the reproduction opposite) and a white man with clasped hands. Voltaire wrote of this treaty that it was the only one not sworn to and never broken. The Penn Wampum Belt was in the possession of the Penn family in England until 1857, when it was given to the Historical Society of Pennsylvania at Philadelphia, where it may now be seen.

KINSHIP

"Individual behavior," writes William W. Newcomb, Jr., "was controlled primarily by family and kinship groups, rather than by special institutions."⁵

The ancient kinship system of the Delawares was complicated and is still not perfectly understood. We can best approach it by noting the normal classification of major kin groups:

1. *The single (nuclear) family*: mother, father, and their children.
2. *The lineage*: a woman with her descendants in the female line.
3. *The clan*: a group of lineages all tracing descent from a remote or mythical ancestor, often an animal or bird, whose name the clan bore. The Delawares had three clans—Turtle, Turkey, and Wolf—representatives of which could be found in any community.

The classification of relatives was very different from what white men of European ancestry are accustomed to. As with white men, a man's parents were "father" and "mother" and his children were "son" and "daughter," but after that most resemblance ends. His cousins were called "stepsisters" or "stepbrothers" by the Delawares. What we call great-uncle and great-aunt (a grandparent's brother and sister) were "grandfather" and "grandmother" to the Delawares. In other words, all blood kin of the second ascending generation were either "grandfather" or "grandmother."

As for uncles and aunts, as white men understand them, the terms by which they should be addressed depended on whether they were on the mother's or the father's side. One's mother's brother was called "uncle," but the same uncle's wife was not aunt but "great-aunt." What a white man would call aunt (on his mother's side) was the Delaware's "little mother"; her husband was not "little father" but "little stepfather." It was different with aunts and uncles on the father's side. Father's brother was "little father," and his wife was

⁵ *Culture and Acculturation*, 53.

"little mother"; father's sister was "little mother," and her husband was "little stepfather."⁶

It seems complicated, but to the Delawares, who understood the principle of the thing, it was quite simple. That was fortunate, for in addressing one another Indians where possible used kinship terms in place of personal names: not only father and mother, grandfather and grandmother, but great-aunt, younger brother, little mother, little stepfather, and so on.

The strength of any Delaware community lay in the strength of these kinship ties. How much that meant was shown by the turmoil that arose when Echpalawehund, chief of his lineage, proposed to turn Christian and live in a Moravian town. Would his whole family, it was asked, have to leave home and follow him? In the end, to the considerable uneasiness of some of the Moravian leaders, the whole family did follow him into the mission.

What is important to remember about all this is that the Delawares, though they had little sense of nationality as we understand it, were moved by a profound loyalty to a wide circle of kin.

THE DELAWARES AS "WOMEN"

Among Indians, national status was expressed in kinship terms. After the conclusion of the Iroquois-Mahican war in 1673, the victorious Iroquois addressed the Mahicans as "Nephews," and the Mahicans in return acknowledged their conquerors as "Uncles." The same terms of address were exchanged between Iroquois and Delawares. But there was another term, "Woman," that more exactly defined the position of the Delawares in the Iroquois federal system.

The question is often asked why the Iroquois called the Delawares "Women." It is difficult to answer the question briefly, because the term was applied by different people at different times with different meanings. We do not even know when or by what means the Delawares were first brought to accept the title. Some think the Iroquois "inherited" the Delawares from the defunct Susquehannock nation. Others think the Iroquois, after disposing of the Susquehannocks, conducted their own forays (political and military) in order to demonstrate to the Delawares who was now Uncle. There may be truth in both theories. Perhaps, too, the Delawares became tributary ("in an Indian Sense," as Conrad Weiser warned, knowing that the word in English implied greater subordination than actually existed between Delaware and Iroquois) from a somewhat vague sense of the

⁶ *Ibid.*, 45.

fitness of things or a general instinct for accommodation. For we must remember that Indian political arrangements were usually less cut and dried (though not less effective) than those of today's highly codified systems.

One thing is certain. "Woman," as a national designation, was not originally a term of abuse, though it was made to appear so in the later eighteenth century. There are various words for "woman" in the Iroquois tongue. The one applied to the Delawares was an ancient ceremonial term, *Gantowisas*, which we might render "Lady," "Matron," or "Dame" (as in "Dame of the British Empire"). It was a title to be proud of, "like Queen," as Chief Joseph Montour of the Delaware Line on the Six Nations Reserve explained it. The title, *Gantowisas*, Woman, announced to the world that the Delawares held an honorable position, though not full membership, in the Iroquois Longhouse.

As "Women" the Delawares enjoyed the protection of the great League. This is what Chief Tamaqua, the Beaver, said to the Six Nations on the eve of the French and Indian War. His words were recorded at Aughwick, September 3, 1754, by Conrad Weiser.

Uncle: I still remember the Time when You first conquered Us and made Woman of Us, and told Us that You took Us under your Pro[t]ection, and that We must not meddle with Wars, but stay in the House and mind Council Affairs. We have hitherto followed your directions and lived very easy under your Protection, and no high Wind did blow to make Us uneasy; but now Things seem to take another turn, and a high Wind is rising. We desire You, therefore, Uncle, to have your Eyes open and be watchful over Us, your Cousins, as you have always been heretofore.⁷

Unfortunately the word *Gantowisas*, when translated into English as "woman," underwent a change of meaning and loss of dignity. White men, among whom women did not hold as high a position as they did among Indians, made sport of warriors who allowed themselves to be called "women." Some of the Delawares became ashamed of the word. "We are men," they declared in 1755, and took out their scalping knives to prove it.

⁷ Pennsylvania, *Minutes of the Provincial Council of Pennsylvania . . .*, VI, 155-56. Cited hereafter by binder's title as Pennsylvania, *Colonial Records*.



The Delaware Life Cycle

BIRTH

DELAWARE WOMEN were physically strong. They seldom needed assistance in childbirth, although there were experienced women ready to give them whatever advice and help they might desire. When the event was approaching, the expectant mother got **everything** ready, but did not cease her regular work until an hour or two before the time. If the child was born while the mother was out in the woods, she was able to look after herself and carry the baby home.

As soon as the child was born, it was wrapped in a skin and placed on the cradleboard. This the mother carried about on her back **when** away from home. Sometimes she hung it up on a peg in the house or on a tree branch outside. More often, when the weather was warm, she allowed the child to roll about freely on the grass. It has been suggested that one cause of the Indian child's composure was that its movements were less constricted than those of a white child during infancy. Delaware boys wore no clothes in summer until they were

about six years old. Girls were given a light coat to wear as soon as they could walk.

CHILDHOOD

A child was usually six or seven years old before its parents gave it a name. There was no need to hurry. Personal names were not used at home, kinship terms taking their place. It was only when a person came in contact with the outside world that need arose for an independent name.

When the time came to name a boy or a girl, a ceremony known as "Praying over the Child" was held. Later in life at a similar ceremony the adult might receive another name more descriptive of his career. For a long time after a man's death, it was bad form to refer to him by his personal name.

Indian home life was quiet, free from the noise and anxiety which, according to some psychiatrists, endanger the nervous system of the white child and predispose him to nervous explosions for the rest of his life. From whatever cause—the example of parents, the freedoms enjoyed in infancy, long generations of social conditioning—the Indian child was less given to tantrums than the white child and made a less quarrelsome playmate. He led an active, happy life, assured of his parents' love and warmly responsive to it.

EDUCATION

Children were not weaned until they were two, three, or even four years old, but they were taught to walk at nine months. At the age of four or five, they began their initiation into adult life. The boys were taught woodcraft and hunting; the girls, housekeeping and gardening.

For the boys especially, this training was exciting. They were taken into the hunting woods and given tasks of increasing difficulty to harden them. A religious occasion was made of a boy's first killing of a deer. The boy gave the venison to the oldest man or woman of the village, who thereupon held a feast at which the deer was offered as a sacrifice to the twelve gods: the Great Spirit and His eleven chief agents. At this Burnt Offering or First Fruits, the boy's elders offered prayers for him and gave him advice concerning his duty to his fellow men, especially to the old people upon whose memories depended the continuance of the tribe's way of life.

Physical punishment was not often inflicted on a child, though a slap given in anger was not unheard of. More common was a dash of cold water in the face, a ducking in the stream, or a rubbing of the tongue with a bitter root. Sometimes the bad child was warned that

the Naked Bear might get him or the Mask Being poke him with a stick. But it was not often necessary to discipline children, the tasks to which they were assigned being out in the open air, active, and interesting.

Learning the tribal legends and committing the records of events to memory was part of a child's education. The Delawares had no written language, yet they believed a knowledge of the past to be the necessary foundation of a stable society. To safeguard the tribal memory, not only were the old people given special reverence, but every boy's mind was filled with the tribe's traditions. In story and song, in religious ritual and its interpretation, the past was kept constantly before him. For more exact training of this kind, boys from chiefly families were expected to attend certain council meetings at which old belts of wampum were brought out while sages explained their meaning. Young men memorized these historical interpretations word for word, so that the past should not fade with the death of their elders.

INITIATION

A boy at the age of puberty or a little later entered manhood through an initiation or ordeal sometimes known as Youth's Vigil, by which he linked himself with the spiritual world and obtained a guardian *Manito*. The duration of this vigil and the preparations for it varied from place to place, but the essentials were the same everywhere. The boy retired to some hidden place in the forest and remained there for days, fasting and alone. Sometimes his parents, in order to humble him and thus prepare him emotionally for a redemptive vision, drove him away from home in pretended anger. If, after some days of solitary fasting, there came to him a dream or waking trance in which, at sight of some animal or natural object, he was swept by a feeling of security and peace, it was believed that he had found his link with the world beyond. The Creator had sent him a *Manito*, a spiritual power, on which he might rely for strength and protection throughout his life.

In maturity some men had further visions, which they recounted at sacred ceremonies. Sometimes the visionary found himself in touch with departed friends, as when a Delaware in Ontario some years ago found himself standing on the bank of "a great water," and heard from the other side the voices of friends who had "gone beyond." They were singing over and over syllables which were unintelligible to him but which by their cadence conveyed to his ear something of the sad but not bitter mystery of death.

MARRIAGE

Marriage was usually arranged by the parents, but no compulsion was laid upon the children. Their wishes were respected, and were final. Indians married early, the men often at seventeen or eighteen, the girls at thirteen or fourteen—the age of Shakespeare's Juliet.

It was against Delaware propriety that young couples before marriage should talk together unchaperoned. Courtship was a matter of gift giving.

If an Indian man wishes to marry [wrote Loskiel], he first sends a present of blankets, cloth, linen, and perhaps a few belts of wampom, to the nearest relations of the person he has fixed upon. If they happen to be pleased, both with the present and the character and conduct of the suitor, they propose the matter to the girl, who generally decides agreeably to the wish of her parents and relations. . . . But if the other party chuses to decline the proposal, they return the present, by way of a friendly negative.¹

The love of husband and wife was not publicly demonstrated, but it was strong and usually enduring. While it might be only convention that led a Delaware husband to see that his wife was well-dressed—better dressed than he was—it was deep affection that led him to many acts of devotion. He would do almost anything to meet his wife's wishes. Heckewelder tells of a man who, in a time of famine, traveled a hundred miles and back (between Tuscarawas and Lower Sandusky) to get his sick wife a little corn. He traded his horse for "as much corn as filled the crown of his hat," and came back on foot, carrying his saddle.² The suicide of man or woman because of some fancied slight received from the other was not uncommon.

Polygamy was not frowned upon, but it was infrequent. Divorce was easy, depending merely upon the expressed wish of one or both parties. But couples with children seldom separated.

OLD AGE

Old age was universally respected. Youth had no quarrel with age. Perhaps that was because the old men in council gave full attention to the opinions of youth. It was bad form for a younger man to break off conversation with an elder, or to overtake and pass him on the road without the latter's express permission. Deference was carried sometimes to an extreme. On the trail, if the leader of a party happened to be an older man and took a wrong turning, no one in the party would correct him unless his advice was asked.

¹ *History of the Mission*, I, 57.

² *History, Manners, and Customs*, 159.

DEATH AND BURIAL

The warmhearted Delawares were subject to deep and overwhelming grief. Their burial ceremonies dramatized the emotion without compromising its sincerity. Heckewelder, in describing the funeral in 1762 of the wife of Shingas, pictured on the one hand the professional mourners in loud, conventional lamentation, and on the other the chief at a distance weeping silently by himself.

The last service performed for a woman about to start on her journey to the Sky World was to attire her in her best clothes and to place beside her body whatever she might need on the way: deerskin for fresh moccasins, needles and thread for sewing, food, a wooden bowl and spoon, and some of the little things that had pleased her while she lived. A man's necessities and desires were attended to in the same way.

The funeral ceremonies, known as "Mourning over the Corpse," consisted mainly of a long period of silence (two hours, according to Heckewelder's observation), followed by the cries of the mourners while the body was being lowered into the grave, and the erection of a painted post covered with designs representing the deceased's situation in life. A meal was served and gifts were presented to all present.

At dusk [wrote Heckewelder] a kettle of victuals was carried to the grave and placed upon it, and the same was done every evening for the space of three weeks [more usually eleven days]. . . . During that time the lamentations of the women mourners were heard on the evenings of each day, though not so loud nor so violent as before.³

It was believed that, unless food were placed on the grave, the soul would have to enter some private house to refresh itself. Not that it devoured any material substance. It was nourished by the food's spirit-essence.

Every person, they believed, had two souls: one in the heart and one in the blood. It was the former that made the Sky Journey. The heart soul remained near the body for eleven days. Then, on the twelfth, after being offered food by its living friends in a Feast of the Dead, it started on its way to the Spirit World. The soul in the blood, on the other hand, remained on earth. This was the ghost that appeared at night to friends, sometimes causing paralysis and lameness, especially if they had neglected to provide the Feast of the Dead.

"For fear of this soul," writes Dr. Newcomb, "nobody ever eats in the dark or allows a sick person to be in a dark room."⁴

³ Paul A. W. Wallace (ed.), *Thirty Thousand Miles with John Heckewelder* (Pittsburgh, 1958), 62.

⁴ *Culture and Acculturation*, 64.



Delaware Religion

If the word religion means a formal belief in certain written Articles of Faith . . . then we can truly say: the Indians . . . have no religion. . . . But if by the word religion we understand the knitting of the soul to God, and the intimate relation to, and hunger after the highest Being arising therefrom, then we must certainly allow this apparently barbarous people a religion.—Conrad Weiser¹

THE GREAT SPIRIT AND HIS AGENTS

THE BASIC PRINCIPLE of Delaware religion was that spirit was the prime reality. All things had souls: not only man, but also animals, the air, water, trees, even rocks and stones.

In control of nature—usually for man's benefit—were three orders of supernatural beings: (1) certain spirit forces on earth; (2) eleven appointed spirits, demigods, who from eleven heavens controlled

¹ Paul A. W. Wallace, *Conrad Weiser, Friend of Colonist and Mohawk* (Philadelphia, 1945), 21.

natural phenomena on the earth below; (3) the Great Spirit or Creator, dwelling in the Twelfth or Highest Heaven.

The Delawares had no strict creed, and they enforced no orthodoxy. There was considerable latitude in the detail of their beliefs. All gave thanks to the Great (and good) Spirit, the Creator, described by a Delaware who claimed to have seen him as a great man "clothed with the day; yea, with the brightest day he ever saw . . . this whole world . . . was drawn upon him, so that *in* him, the earth, and all things on it, might be seen."² All Delawares gave thanks also to eleven demigods for the gifts of nature. But they were not all agreed on the identity of these eleven.

The Reverend John Jacob Schmick, a Moravian missionary at Wyalusing, listed the following demigods in his description of the "Burnt Offering": Sun, Moon, Earth, Fire, Water, House, Corn, and the Four Quarters—East, West, North, and South. M. R. Harrington, from observations of the Delawares in Oklahoma, listed the two Thunders and the Mask Being in place of Fire, Water, and House:

This Great Spirit gave the four quarters of the earth and the winds that came from them to four powerful beings, or *manî-towuk*, namely, Our Grandfather where daylight begins, Our Grandmother where it is warm, Our Grandfather where the sun goes down, and Our Grandfather where it is winter. To the Sun and the Moon, regarded as persons and addressed as Elder Brothers by the Indians, he gave the duty of providing light, and to our Elder Brothers the Thunders, man-like beings with wings, the task of watering the crops, and of protecting the people against the Great Horned Serpents and other water monsters. To the Living Solid Face, or Mask Being, was given charge of all the wild animals; to the Corn Spirit, control over all vegetation, while Our Mother, the Earth, received the task of carrying and feeding the people.³

It has been suggested that the concept of the Great Spirit may have been derived from the teaching of Christian missionaries, but the evidence points the other way. David Zeisberger wrote: "They believe and have from time immemorial believed that there is an Almighty Being who has created heaven and earth and man and all things else."⁴ M. R. Harrington, after running over some of the evidence, makes this summary: "Thus we have a practically unbroken chain of authorities, including most of the best ones since 1679, all speaking of the 'Great Spirit' as a well-developed concept."⁵

² M. R. Harrington, *Religion and Ceremonies of the Lenape* (New York, 1921), 23.

³ *Ibid.*, 193.

⁴ "History of the Indians," 128.

⁵ *Religion and Ceremonies of the Lenape*, 22.

John Heckewelder commented:

It is a part of their religious belief, that there are inferior *Mannittos*, to whom the great and good Being has given the rule and command over the elements; that being so great, he, like their chiefs, must have his attendants to execute his supreme behests; these subordinate spirits (something in their nature between God and man) see and report to him what is doing upon earth; they look down particularly upon the Indians, to see whether they are in need of assistance, and are ready at their call to assist and protect them against danger. . . .

But, amidst all these superstitious notions, the supreme Man-
nitto, the creator and preserver of heaven and earth, is the great
object of their adoration. On him they rest their hopes, to him
they address their prayers and make their solemn sacrifices.⁶

Dr. Vernon Kinietz, after making a thorough study of the documentary material and undertaking field work among the Delawares now living in Oklahoma, makes this report:

Religion among the Delaware appears to have been very insusceptible to change. From the records available, over three hundred years of white contact and more or less continuous missionary efforts have produced only one significant change [the idea of hell].

The concept of a Supreme Being, superior to subordinate good and evil deities, who has moral superintendence over worshipers that pray to Him for favors and assistance, is reported from 1643 to the present day, with only occasional dissent and never denial from all sources for any one period. On the belief in a future state of punishments and rewards for which judgment is given immediately after death, there is again complete agreement.⁷

Delaware, Iroquois, and other Indian peoples, after the Christian missionaries began to spread their doctrines, found much to attract them in the new religion, but were repelled by many of those who professed it. The men whom the Indians met in the border country were—with some honorable exceptions—far from the best representatives of Christian civilization. Contact with them inevitably colored the Indians' attitude toward the whole white race. The Shawnee chief Kakowatchiky explained this to Count Zinzendorf in 1742 when he said that the difference between the Indian's religion and the white man's was that the Indian had it in his heart while the white man had it on his lips. Devoted missionaries like the Jesuits in Canada and the Moravians in Pennsylvania showed what Christianity could be,

⁶ *History, Manners, and Customs*, 212-13.

⁷ *Delaware Culture Chronology* (Indianapolis, 1946), 21.

and many Indians were drawn to it. Yet most of them clung to the faith of their fathers, saying, as the Delaware preacher did to Zeisberger at Goschgoschink, that there were two paths to the Sky, the white man's and the Indian's, or four paths (one for each of the four great races) as Handsome Lake believed.

Religion permeated all life. To the Delawares, the spirit world was alive and visible in every aspect of nature. When the storm cloud approached and the lightning flashed, it was no electrical phenomenon they saw but man's spirit friends, the Thunderers, come to do battle with the Horned Serpent and to bring water for the crops. The fact that the Delawares have not handed down to us any clear body of religious doctrine does not mean that they had no mental universe. It means only that their best thought has been handed down, not in creeds and formulas, but (to borrow words from Mircea Eliade) "in myths, symbols, and customs which still, in spite of every sort of corruption, show clearly what they meant when they began."

THE BIG HOUSE CEREMONY

At the heart of all religions lies the belief that power, *mana*, resides in certain things, material or immaterial. These are objects of awe and adoration. Anything associated in the believer's mind with these objects and this divine power is sacred, be it song, ritual, or image. It is a mistake to confuse the object of awe with the poetic symbols that call it to mind. Nevertheless, one of the surest ways to get at the essence of a particular faith is to note its chief symbols and look through them to see what they meant to the believer.

To understand the ancient religion of the Delaware Indians, it is necessary to look first at the symbols contained in their most important annual event, the Big House Ceremony. It is, of course, probably true that the precise form in which its twelve-day ritual has come down to us does not antedate the year 1805, when the revelations of a Munsee prophetess gave it final shape; but its central symbol, the World Tree (imaged in the Center Post), is very old.

If some of its symbols seem strange today—too strange to satisfy our sense of the sacred—we should remember that they come from a very distant past. They were the natural forms by which great ideas were brought home to hunters of the early Stone Age, just as the religious thought of the Old Testament was brought home to a pastoral people by metaphors taken from the life of the shepherd. If we look through these Delaware metaphors to the vision beyond them, we shall find ourselves in company with ideas that are quite modern, although the garb in which they are dressed is ancient.

The prime purpose of the ceremony was to give thanks to the Great Spirit in the Twelfth Heaven and to His principal agents below: Mother Earth, the Sun, the Moon, the Four Winds, and all the others. A second purpose was to remind the devout Delawares that the spirit powers were the realities.

The origin of that part of the Big House Ceremony known as the Bear Sacrifice is explained in a narrative given to Dr. Speck (from whom our best knowledge of the ceremony comes) by the late Nicodemus Peters (Nekatcit) of the Grand River Reserve in Ontario. The constellation known as the Great Bear or the Big Dipper represented to the Indian imagination a bear hunt. The four stars making the quadrangular figure were the body of the bear; the three stars in the handle of the Dipper were three hunters (the often-heard interpretation that these were the bear's tail is absurd, because bears have short tails); and the little star, Alcor, behind the second hunter, was his dog. Every year in October the bear was overtaken and killed. It was his blood that reddened the forest leaves.

That this was an exceedingly old myth is suggested by the fact that the ritual in which it is preserved contains no plant symbols. Dr. Speck believed it to be a survival from a time before the cultivation of plants began, when men lived by hunting.

The late Chief Joseph Frederick Montour (1853-1938) thought the origin of the Big House Ceremony was to be found in a story that is widespread among Algonkian peoples, especially in New England, where Nathaniel Hawthorne found it and gave it fresh currency: the story of the Great Stone Face. In Dr. Speck's recording of Montour's version, the Delawares were once traveling among the mountains in their home country, somewhere in the Delaware-Hudson region.

"They were under a spiritual ban [said Montour] caused by their wickedness and failure to heed the worship of the Creator. Misery and unhappiness oppressed them. In passing through a bristling defile between mountains they suddenly saw a stone face outlined in the crags above them. The sight impressed them so deeply that their leaders took it as a sign placed in the path by the Creator as an admonition to them for their remissness. They realized that it was meant as a reminder of the Father-Creator—it was his image."

"Impressed accordingly by this revelation," concludes Dr. Speck, "they carved the images of the Creator's face in wood and placed them thereafter on the east and west sides of the center-post of the Big House."⁸

⁸ Frank G. Speck, *The Celestial Bear Comes Down to Earth* (Reading, 1945), 41-42.

The symbolism of the Big House itself—a simple wooden structure of perhaps fifty by thirty feet in size—is thus explained:

. . . the Big House stands for the universe; its floor, the earth; its four walls, the four quarters; its vault, the sky dome, atop which resides the Creator in his indefinable supremacy. To use Delaware expressions, the Big House being the universe, the center post is the staff of the Great Spirit with its foot upon the earth, its pinnacle reaching to the hand of the Supreme Deity. The floor of the Big House is the flatness of the earth upon which sit the three grouped divisions of mankind, the human social groupings [Turtle, Turkey, Wolf] . . . in their appropriate places; the eastern door is the point of sunrise where day begins and at the same time the symbol of the beginning of things; the western door the point of sunset and symbol of termination; the north and south walls assume the meaning of respective horizons; the roof of the temple is the visible sky vault. The ground beneath the Big House is the realm of the underworld while above the roof lie the extended planes or levels, twelve in number, stretched upward to the abode of the "Great Spirit, even the Creator" as Delaware form puts it. . . .

But the most engrossing allegory of all stands forth in the concept of the White Path, the symbol of the transit of life, which is met with in the oval, hard-trodden dancing path outlined on the floor of the Big House. . . . This is the path of life down which man wends his way to the western door where all ends. Its correspondent exists I assume in the Milky Way, where the passage of the soul after death continues in the spirit realm. As the dancers in the Big House ceremony wend their stately passage following the course of the White Path they "push something along," meaning existence, with their rhythmic tread. Not only the passage of life, but the journey of the soul after death is symbolically figured in the ceremony. . . .⁹

The most conspicuous object inside the Big House was the Center Post, which symbolized the World Tree, extending from the earth to the Creator in the sky.

THE AFTERLIFE

Delaware beliefs concerning the afterlife have been summarized by M. R. Harrington:

The doctrine of the survival of the soul or spirit after the death of the body, forms an integral part of the Lenape belief. The spirit is supposed to leave the body at the moment of dissolution, but remains in the vicinity eleven days, during which time it subsists on food found in the houses of the living, if none has been placed at the grave. . . .

⁹ Speck, *Big House Ceremony*, 22-23.

On the twelfth day the spirit leaves the earth and makes its way to the twelfth or highest heaven, the home of the Creator, where it lives indefinitely in a veritable "Happy Hunting Ground," a beautiful country where life goes on much as it does on earth, except that pain, sickness, and sorrow are unknown, and distasteful work and worry have no place; where children shall meet their parents who have gone before, and parents their children; where everything always looks new and bright. There is no sun in the Land of Spirits, but a brighter light which the Creator has provided. All people who die here, be they young or old, will look the same age there, and the blind, cripples,—anyone who has been maimed or injured,—will be perfect and as good as any there. This is because the flesh only was injured, not the spirit.

This paradise, however, is only for the good, for those who have been kind to their fellows and have done their duty by their people.¹⁰

THE WORLD ON THE TURTLE'S BACK

The Delaware story of the Creation has little to do with religion, and certainly nothing to do with science. Yet it is an honest attempt to explain the origin of things. It may not be good metaphysics, but it has social significance, for it explains the respect paid by the Indians to those lineages which claim the turtle as their ancestor.

The story is told in one form or another in most parts of the earth. The Iroquoian and Algonkian versions are very much alike. The particular variant accepted by the Delawares has never been recorded in full. What we know of it comes chiefly from reports made by the Moravian missionaries Zeisberger and Heckewelder.

In the beginning, we are told, there were people in Heaven. It might be observed here that, just as modern Americans find it difficult to think of infinity and eternity ("out of space, out of time"), so the early Indians found it difficult to conceive of existence without people to "take it in." The sky people were much like the people now on earth, but they possessed powers which men have since lost. One day a pregnant woman fell through a hole in the sky. She landed on the back of a great turtle in the midst of a wide sea. There she gave birth to a daughter, who in time gave birth to two boys, twins (some versions make it four sons). One of these grew up to become the life-giving principle of the universe, the Creator—continuously creative, as we see in the renewing life of plants, animals, and man. The other was barren and destructive. A struggle between them ensued, in the course of which the Creative Spirit was conqueror.

¹⁰ *Religion and Ceremonies of the Lenape*, 52.

As for the origin of the earth, the creation of the land, a diver bird (in Zeisberger's version) brought up a bit of mud from the bottom of the sea and deposited it on the turtle's back. According to Heckewelder, the turtle itself brought up some earth. Other versions give the honor to the muskrat, which dived, scooped up some mud, but failed to get back to the surface alive. From a speck of earth, however, clutched in its dead paws, the world miraculously took its birth.

Among the Blacksnake papers in the Draper Manuscripts in Wisconsin is found an early nineteenth-century Iroquois version of the creation legend, which is here briefly summarized:¹¹

Before the creation of our earth, there was a land of happy people above the sky. The lord of that land provided everything for his people's comfort and happiness. There was neither sickness nor pain. The fruits of the earth were always ripe. No sun shone there, but a Living Tree with white blossoms gave light.

One night a man-being, sometimes known as the Chieftain of the Skies, had a dream, and he knew he must die if the dream were not fulfilled. He dreamed that the Tree of Light was plucked up by the roots. His four brothers worked hard to fulfill the dream and save his life. When at last they brought the tree down, it fell with such force that it knocked a hole through the ground, so that the sky could be seen below.

Then the man-being rose and called to his wife to come and see. Together they sat on the edge and as they looked down they saw the light coming upward from the Tree of Light as it fell. (In the soil beside them, there were shoots from the Tree which were already strong enough to illuminate the above-sky world.) They felt a tender air coming up from below, and they heard the sound of the South Wind bringing "the air of life."

The man said to his wife, who was with child, "Do you see the light below?" She answered, "Yes." He said: "You shall create a new world down there. You shall be the mother of all generations on the Earth." And he pushed her through the opening and she went down towards the great light below.

As she fell, she looked up, and there was nothing but blue above her as far as the eye could reach. Birds flew by. They asked her if she were afraid, and told her not to fear; there were ten thousand below who would take care of her. As she approached a great expanse of water, birds gathered under her and bore her safely up. Looking about for someone strong enough to hold her forever above the water they

¹¹ Draper MSS, 22 F, 23 ff. (Joseph Brant Papers), State Historical Society of Wisconsin (microfilm).

chose the mud turtle, for, they said, "He never tires, nor dies without his father's consent."

So the mud turtle swam up to the surface of the water, and the birds let the woman down gently on his back. While she rested there, the water fowls and the water animals dived into the water to find a little bit of earth. When they found it, they put it on the turtle's back. The soil and the turtle together began to grow in size, and soon there was enough land for the woman to walk about on.

The mud turtle then said to the woman, "I will remain forever to support you and all the generations that are to come. These commands I have received from above."

So the turtle continued to grow and the land on his back became covered with grass. After a time the woman gave birth to a girl child. When the child grew to be a woman, she walked into the sea, and from that union she gave birth to twin boys. One, the Good Twin, was born like a normal child. The other, the Bad Twin, came out from under his mother's armpit and killed her. The grandmother buried her daughter, with her feet toward the sunrise. Corn grew from her body in the earth.

The Good Twin, usually known as Sapling (who represents the creative principle), smiled on the earth, but the Bad Twin, Flint, only mocked at everything. The Good Twin created the sun to give light by day and the moon to give light by night. He created the plants and animals and man. The Bad Twin hid the animals in a cave (until his brother released them) and created misshapen things like bats and snakes.

There was as yet no woman to till the ground and make the plants multiply. Sapling, the Creator, made woman; and he told man and woman to live together and enjoy the fruits of the earth.

John Fadden (Ka-hon-hes), a Mohawk of the Turtle Clan, has painted his concept of the Creation legend on the side of an Indian drum. His version is reproduced as the frontispiece of this book.

TOBACCO

Tobacco held a unique place in Indian life, offering solace to mind as well as body. It may very likely have first come into use as medicine, for which it is still used; but its primary, its essential, meaning is religious. The fume that goes forth, as Dr. Hartley Burr Alexander observes in *The World's Rim*, is both a gift of incense to the Great Spirit and a breath of prayer.

Its fullest meaning is found in the rite of the calumet. By means of the ceremonial smoke rising from the pipe's bowl, the Indian sought to bring himself into harmony with the life of all nature.

That the instrument employed [writes Dr. Alexander] has been called "the Pipe of Peace" is due, no doubt, to the fact that every Indian council in which men sought to resolve their differences and every rite in which they endeavored to put themselves into tranquil accord with the powers which participate with man in the life of nature, was inaugurated with the ceremonial smoking. The whole meaning of human existence is bound up with the ritual of the calumet.¹²

John Jacob Schmick tells how, at the Burnt Offering Ceremony, tobacco was placed on twelve heated stones, that the smoke as it rose might carry prayers to the Twelve Heavens.¹³

The Medicine Bundle, which also was sacred and had a profound influence on Indian life, has been discussed in Chapter 5.

TWELVE—THE SACRED NUMBER

To the Delawares, the number twelve was sacred. It is not certain how this had come about. Dr. Frank Speck¹⁴ thought it might be because of the arrangement in twelves of the scales on the shell of the turtle, an animal revered for its role in the creation and because it bears the earth-island on its back. There are twelve marginal scales on each side of the turtle's back, twelve plus one scales on top (corresponding with the twelve or thirteen moons in the Indian year), and twelve scales underneath. Some Delawares explained the sacredness of twelve in this way: The Great Manito, they said, at one time came down to earth to show men how to worship. When he returned to heaven, he took with him twelve sumach sticks, which they could see shining far up in the air. "Every now and then he dropped one, and when he dropped the twelfth he disappeared, while they heard the heavens crack like thunder behind him as he went in."¹⁵

For whatever reason, the Delawares used the number twelve repeatedly in their religious observances. As we have seen, there were twelve heavens, in the highest of which lived the Great Spirit, while each of the eleven lower heavens was presided over by a manito or spirit who was a benefactor to man. These lesser manitos repeated

¹² *The World's Rim*, 4.

¹³ Friedenshütten Diary, September 23, 1770, Archives of the Moravian Church, Bethlehem.

¹⁴ *The Celestial Bear*, 46.

¹⁵ Harrington, *Religion and Ceremonies of the Lenape*, 127-28.

man's prayers from one heaven to another until they reached the Great Spirit in the Twelfth Heaven.

In the First Fruits Ceremony, twelve deer were sacrificed. There were twelve heated stones in the Sacred Sweat Lodge Ceremony. The great annual festival of worship, the Big House Ceremony, lasted for twelve nights. In the Big House, twelve carved faces adorned the posts, twelve prayer sticks were used in the ritual, and tobacco was thrown twelve times into the fire. The ceremony was concluded on the twelfth night with twelve songs and twelve prayers, after which the chief said: "We have heard our old parents say that, if you sweep this Meeting House twelve different times, you will sweep up to where our great Father is, as he is up in the twelfth Heaven above the earth."¹⁸

A Delaware community had twelve "Selected Men," persons of good physique who were specially gifted in the spiritual way. They took a leading part in the religious rites and were allowed a good deal of authority in the civil life of the people. It was believed they had power to detect untruthfulness and also to prophesy. They were, in consequence, advisers to the chiefs, and they undertook important missions. When a criminal was condemned to death by the chief and his council, one of the Selected Men delivered the deathblow with a club.

To rid themselves of evil, some men caused themselves to be beaten with twelve sticks, one after another; others cleansed themselves with a medicine compounded of twelve different herbs. Boys who, during their ordeal, managed to fast for twelve days, were believed to attain magic powers, such as the ability to rise above the ground, to sink into the earth, and to foretell the future.

When a man died, his soul, though it immediately left the body, remained in the neighborhood for eleven days. On the twelfth, it set out on its twelve-year journey, as some said, to the Twelfth Heaven.

Nowhere is the persistence of the number twelve better shown than in David Zeisberger's description of the Sweating Rite in his "Diary of a Journey to Goschgoschink":

If one would arrange a feast of this kind, he goes hunting and shoots one or two bears. Then he invites his guests. In the house where the feast is to be celebrated, a sweating-oven is built of twelve pieces of twelve different kinds of wood, not more and not less, which are covered closely with blankets. Then twelve stones of medium size, heated to their greatest intensity, are put in. Thereupon, the host and eleven others of his choosing creep into the oven and remain there until they are unconscious and have to be dragged out. The occupants may

¹⁸ *Ibid.*, 107.

not come out sooner, else the sacrifice is of no value. While the twelve are in the oven, tobacco is strewed upon the stones by the one who has instituted the feast, and prayer is offered by him to his god. To another Indian he gives from ten to twelve fathoms of wampum as a present, in return for which the recipient must go out and with loud voice pray to the god, toward the rising sun. Then the bear's flesh is consumed. Whoever has repeated this sacrifice twelve times is sure of his salvation.¹⁷

THE GOOD LIFE

How did the Delaware's religion affect his daily life?

His assurance of contact with the spiritual world, reinforced as it was by the sights and sounds of the natural world around him, helped to give him a certain poise, a feeling that he "belonged." He "trod lightly through his natural environment," writes Dr. William A. Ritchie, "merging himself sympathetically into the world of living and non-living things."

He felt joy and pain, both intensely, but he seldom gave way to disillusionment. He was early taught to believe that life, like Youth's Vigil, was an ordeal, and he adjusted himself to it. He did not, however, believe that the governance of life on this earth was in hostile hands.

Belief in future rewards and punishments encouraged self-control. The Indian showed remarkable courage and endurance. He was honest in his dealings, observant of community customs. In the Land of Happy Spirits beyond the Sky Path, good men and women were assured of a home among their kin, while evil persons wandered, perpetually restless and dissatisfied.

Like all religious people in greater or less degree, the Indian was able to identify himself, through the imagination, with things and purposes beyond the range of his immediate interest. We see this, for example, in his practice of conservation. John Witthoft in "The American Indian—Hunter" has expressed this well:

The white man saw nature as a source of property, to be mastered by his efforts, while the Indian saw himself as a part of nature, who survived only because he kept his place in the scheme of things and was therefore aided and protected by the deities who controlled his natural environment.¹⁸

¹⁷ David Zeisberger and Gottlob Senseman, *Diary of a Journey to Goschgoschink*, January 27, 1769, Box 135, Folders 1-2, Archives of the Moravian Church.

¹⁸ *Pennsylvania Game News*, XXIV, No. 2 (February, 1953), 12.

It is true that the Indian hunted, but it was for food and not mainly for sport. In the words of Dr. Hartley Burr Alexander, he felt even the humblest animals

to be participant with man in nature's rights. He will not rob the bee of all its honey; with the field mouse he traffics maize for the rodent's store of beans, being careful to leave the kernels in the nest whence the store of prized wild beans has been accumulated; and he erects tabus against the slaughter of animals with young, or the needless diminution of the herd. The white hunter, to the Indian, who slays for sport and beyond any food need, is a criminal against nature, and blasphemous of the meaning of life.¹⁹

The Indian thus expressed in action what one of Europe's best minds has counseled. Wrote Montaigne in sixteenth-century France: "We owe justice to men and kindness to other creatures; there is an intercourse and mutual obligation between them and us."

The Indian's attitude to the land (always difficult for the eighteenth-century land speculator to understand) stemmed from his religion. He believed that both the land and the animals that roamed the forest had been given by the Creator for the common use, and were not to be regarded as anyone's private property.

"What," said Tecumseh. "Sell land! As well sell air and water. The Great Spirit gave them in common to all."²⁰

The Indian's proverbial hospitality, which distinguishes him to this day, was religious in origin.

They give and are hospitable to all, without exception [wrote John Heckewelder], and will always share with each other and often with the stranger, even to their last morsel. They rather would lie down themselves on an empty stomach, than have it laid to their charge that they had neglected their duty, by not satisfying the wants of the stranger, the sick or the needy. . . . Besides, on the principle, that all are descended from one parent, they look upon themselves as but one great family, who therefore ought at all times and on all occasions, to be serviceable and kind to each other, and by that means make themselves acceptable to the head of the universal family, the great and good Manitto.²¹

Sex crimes were unknown; crimes of violence, rare. Theft was almost unheard of. They did not fasten their houses when they went out. They left a stick leaning against the doorway to signify that they were not at home; nobody would then enter. Hunters often left their

¹⁹ *The World's Rim*, 183-84.

²⁰ Quoted by John Collier, *The Indians of the Americas* (New York, 1947), 214-15.

²¹ *History, Manners, and Customs*, 101-102.

utensils by the trail, unconcealed, knowing that no one would touch them.

Conrad Weiser in the early eighteenth century summed up what "the good life" meant to the Indian:

The teachings of Christ and his apostles are more congenial to them than to [many so-called Christians]: for when it is said Owe no man anything save to love one another Rom. 13:8 Be not anxious for the morrow Matth 6:34 He that is greatest among you shall be your servant Matth 23:11. . . . That is what they actually practice without calling themselves Christian, while many who bear the name never give such things a thought.²²

²² Wallace, *Conrad Weiser*, 20-21.



Delaware Amusements

STORYTELLING

THE DELAWARES were great entertainers, and they had a large repertory of myths, legends, folk tales, tall stories, and amusing "situations" with which to enliven winter evenings by the fireside.

They looked on storytelling as a community art, and they bound it by strict rules. The time and place for telling a story had to be right, and conditions varied with different kinds of narrative. The time for folk tales was in the winter. If you told them in the summer, the snakes would come out and listen. The place for such tales was indoors. Telling them out-of-doors was likely to cause trouble in the animal kingdom, for many of these adventures involved tricks whereby gods and men outwitted and subdued the woodland creatures.

Storytelling was almost a ritual. Except for hunters and warriors recounting their personal adventures, the story had to be "straight," that is, word perfect. Otherwise members of the audience, who had good memories, would be offended.

Few Delaware stories in the lighter vein have come down to us,

but the following traditional account of the first meeting between Indians and white men may serve as an example of the type. It came from Captain Pipe of Sandusky and was written down in 1824 by C. C. Trowbridge.

. . . Captain Pipe says that in those days [before the white man came] the Indians were accustomed to worship annually as they now do, in a large building prepared & kept for that purpose [the Big House Ceremony]. At one of these meetings an old man prophesied the coming of some important and extraordinary event, and a few days after a ship hove in sight and a boat with some of the officers came on shore. The Indians, supposing the crew to be inferior deities sent by the great Spirit, spread beaver skins upon the ground for them to walk upon. . . .

After becoming familiar with them the whites solicited them to give a small piece of land upon which they might build a fire to prepare their food. They demanded only a piece as large as a Bullocks hide and the request was readily granted, when to their great astonishment the bullocks hide was soaked in water and cut into a small cord with which the land was surrounded. However, they determined to overlook the deception and be more wary in future. They [*sic*] whites presented them with Axes, hoes &c and departed, promising to revisit them the next year. Upon their return they were not a little amused to see the Indians walking about with these things suspended from their necks as ornaments. They taught them their use, trafficked a little with them, and at length told them that they wanted more lands, because it was impossible from the smallness of the size of the first grant, to build a fire upon it without being incommoded with the smoke. It was therefore resolved to add to the first piece a quantity large enough to hold the chair of the whites, without the influence of the smoke. Upon this the bottom of the chair, which was composed of small cords, was taken out and like the hide, stretched around the lands. This second deception determined them never to give more lands without fixing some boundary understood by both parties distinctly.¹

The origin of the Pleiades is explained by Oklahoma Delawares in the delightful tale of the Seven Wise Men. Gladys Tantaquidgeon records it as it was told to her by Witapanoxwe, "Walks with Daylight." A long time ago (the Indian equivalent to our "once upon a time") there were seven wise men, prophets, who were so much bothered by curiosity seekers that they turned themselves into rocks on the hillside in order to be free. At length a young man who had supernatural insight found them. He agreed not to betray their dis-

¹C. C. Trowbridge, "Account of Some of the Traditions, Manners and Customs of the Lenee Lenupee or Delaware Indians," Michigan Historical Collections, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan (microfilm).

guise, but he continued his visits, for he enjoyed their conversation. One day some people, following the young man without his knowledge, discovered the secret of the talking rocks. The news was soon spread, crowds trampled the hillside, and the philosophers had to find another way to escape notice. This time they turned themselves into seven stately cedars in the forest. But again they were discovered, and again and again, changing into fresh forms but never long escaping curious eyes. At last the Great Spirit took pity on them. Walks with Daylight concluded: "The Creator thought that it was of no use to place them on earth as they were being constantly bothered by earthly things so he placed them in the heavens. There we see the seven stars as they were placed there so long ago by the Creator."²

We are indebted to John Heckewelder and David Zeisberger for preserving fragments of Delaware mythology.

Of the spherical form of the earth [writes Zeisberger] they have no conception. . . . The sky, they say, rests upon the water probably because it appears so to do when they look out upon the sea. Others declare that there is a place where the sky strikes the earth, rises again and continues moving up and down, smiting a rock, which causes such a report that it may be heard many days' journey. Two great captains once visited that place, and one of them risked going through the opening when the sky rose. He succeeded in getting into heaven and coming back. Yet where this place is they know as little as they do the location of Tschipey Hacki, the land of spirits. The sun, they think, sinks into the water when it sets. . . . The milky way is the road to Tschipey Hacki. . . . In case of an eclipse of sun or moon, they say that these bodies have fallen into a swoon.³

Heckewelder tells us why the Delawares were proud of their clan totems:

The Tortoise, or as it is commonly called, the *Turtle* tribe, among the Lenape, claims a superiority and ascendancy over the others, because their *relation*, the great Tortoise, a fabled monster, the Atlas of their mythology, bears according to their traditions this great *island* on his back, and also because he is amphibious, and can live both on land and in the water, which neither of the heads of the other tribes can do. The merits of the *Turkey*, which gives its name to the second tribe, are that he is stationary, and always remains with or about them. As to the *Wolf*, after whom the third tribe is named, he is a rambler by nature, running from one place to another in quest of his prey; yet they consider him as their benefactor, as it was by

² Tantaquidgeon, *Delaware Indian Medicine*, 69.

³ "History of the Indians," 147-48.

his means that the Indians got out of the interior of the earth. It was he, they believe, who by the appointment of the Great Spirit, killed the deer whom the Monsey found who first discovered the way to the surface of the earth, and which allured them to come out of their damp and dark residence. For that reason, the wolf is to be honoured, and his name preserved for ever among them.⁴

MUSIC

The Delawares were fond of music, especially singing. Benjamin Mortimer, a Moravian missionary, found they had good voices and a good ear. Songs accompanied all their public ceremonies. There were special songs with appropriate rhythms for particular occasions: prayer, the dance, hunting, games, courtship, battle, death.

Our eastern Indians did not, however, at first have many musical instruments. The flute, about which we hear from early travelers, may have been introduced by white men. The Indians' chief instruments were the drum, made of deerskin tightened over a frame, and the "turtle rattle," a dried tortoise shell in which had been inserted a few pebbles or some corn. These gave rhythm for dancing feet, while the human voice, solo or in chorus, provided accompaniment.

Indian melodies, though strange to our ears, had a definite musical structure. There were rhythmic patterns and well-defined melodic phrases. But, instead of the mechanical regularity of our classical music, Indian songs had measures of unequal length balancing each other and pleasing the ear with the effect of recurrence. Indians took, moreover, what at first seem liberties with the scale (actually they used at least four different scales) which remind one of European folk music.

In compass they ranged from one to three octaves. Some songs had no words but were sung to meaningless syllables: vocables, such as *ho ho*, being set to a melody. There were some songs that belonged exclusively to particular individuals or societies. Ceremonial songs, prayers to Heaven, were guarded with extreme care against error. If the words were not "straight" they might not reach the right Powers and harm might result.

GAMES

The Delawares were fond of sports: foot races, lacrosse, shinny, wrestling, jumping, hopping, lifting or throwing stones, shooting or throwing arrows. They had a game of dice in which they gambled on

⁴ *History, Manners, and Customs*, 253.

the throw of a certain number of flat bones or oval cherry stones painted black on one side and yellow on the other. They had also something like a modern card game, played with pieces of reed.

The famous moccasin game was played on the night before a funeral. A ball was hidden under one of four moccasins lying on a deerskin. If the ball was found under the first or the fourth moccasin turned up, it counted in the tally for the finder, who then had the ball to hide. If, however, it was turned up at the second or third try, it counted for the side that had hidden it, which then had the right to hide it again. The side that won three times in a row won a game. The number of games to constitute a match was determined in advance by agreement between the players. Sometimes whole villages played, one against the other, gambling large quantities of goods on the outcome. The Indians were good losers. It was a saying among the Iroquois in such contests that the loser won a moral victory because his failure helped him to cultivate humility.

THE DANCE

The Delawares' greatest pleasure was in the dance. It provided their richest form of self-expression. In the Big House they "danced before the Lord." At harvest time they danced their thanksgiving, and they danced their patriotism in time of war. Nearly every night they gave themselves up to "social dances," in which the whole community joined.

The form of the dance, whether in religious ritual or on social occasions, was always the same. They danced in a circle, counter-clockwise, each dancer by himself, the men leading off and the women closing in behind. Where the gathering was large and concentric circles had to be formed, the innermost circle was composed of men, the next of women, the third of men, the fourth of women.

The dances were decorous. The women moved smoothly as a stream. Their feet patted rapidly to the rhythm of the turtle rattle or drum, but they did not bob about. Their bodies were straight, their arms hung relaxed but still. They seemed to glide on air. The older men also, though "stomping" with their feet, moved quietly and gravely. But the younger men were permitted a little clowning. They made fantastic leaps and turns and twirls, punctuating every movement with a shrill cry; but they were careful to observe the rhythm and keep their places in the wheeling circle.

Loskiel, writing in the eighteenth century, has left us a picture of Delaware dancing, noting some variations from the norm just described.

. . . The common dance is held either in a large house, or in an open field around a fire. In dancing they form a circle, and always have a leader, whom the whole company attend to. The men go before, and the women close the circle. The latter dance with great decency, as if engaged in the most serious business; they never speak a word to the men, much less joke with them, which would injure their character. They neither jump nor skip, but move one foot lightly forward, and then backward, yet so as to advance gradually, till they reach a certain spot, and then retire in the same manner. They keep their bodies strait, and their arms hanging down close to their bodies. But the men shout, leap, and stamp with such violence that the ground trembles under their feet. Their extreme agility and lightness of foot is never displayed to more advantage than in dancing. Their whole music consists in a single drum. This is made of an old barrel or kettle, or the lower end of a hollow tree, covered with a thin deer-skin, and beat with one stick. Its sound is disagreeable, and serves only to mark the time, which the Indians, when dancing even in the greatest numbers, keep with due exactness. When one round is finished, they take some rest, during which the drummer continues to sing, till another dance commences. These dances last commonly till midnight.

Another kind of dance is only attended by the men. Each rises in his turn, and dances with great agility and boldness, extolling his own or his forefathers' great deeds in a song, to which the whole company beat time, by a monotonous rough note, given out with great vehemence at the commencement of each bar.

Some dances held upon particular occasions differ much from the above. Of these the chief is the dance of peace, called also *calumet* or pipe-dance, because the *calumet* or pipe of peace is handed about during the dance. This is the most pleasing to strangers, who attend as spectators, its appearance being peaceable, and not so dreadful as the former. The dancers join hands, and leap in a ring for some time. Suddenly the leader lets the hand of one of his partners go, keeping hold of the other. He then springs forward, and turns round several times, by which he draws the whole company round so as to be enclosed by them, when they stand close together. They disengage themselves as suddenly, yet keeping their hold of each others' hands during all the different revolutions and changes in the dance: which, as they explain it, represents the chain of friendship. A song, made purposely for this solemnity, is sung by all.

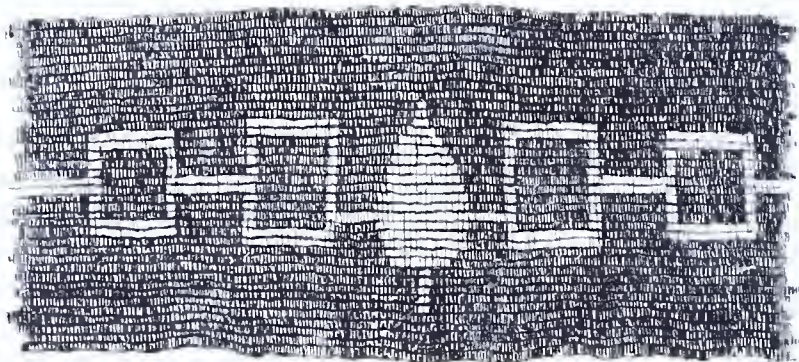
The war-dance, held either before or after a campaign, is dreadful to behold. No one takes share in it, but the warriors themselves. They appear armed as if going to battle. One carries his gun, or an hatchet, another a long knife, the third a tomahawk, the fourth a large club; or they all appear armed with tomahawks. These they brandish in the air, to signify how they intend to treat or have treated their enemies. They affect

such an air of anger and fury on this occasion, that it makes a spectator shudder to behold them. A Chief leads the dance, and sings the warlike deeds of himself or his ancestors. At the end of every celebrated feat of valor, he wields his tomahawk with all his might against a post fixed in the ground. He is then followed by the rest, each finishing his round by a blow against the post. Then they dance all together, and this is the most frightful scene. They affect the most horrible and dreadful gestures, threatening to beat, cut, and stab each other. They are however amazingly dextrous in avoiding the threatened danger. To complete the horror of the scene, they howl as dreadfully as in actual fight, so that they appear as raving madmen.⁵

The Delawares had two religious dances. One was the Worshipping Dance, performed on the White Path in the Big House around the center post. It was a symbol of man's passage through life in the presence of the Creator. The other was the Doll Dance, in which was carried a wooden replica of the Doll Being, a minor deity. Men and women of the community performed this dance in twelve sets in order to please the Doll Being, who had power to bring them health. It was thought that, if the dance were neglected, someone would surely die.

War brought the Begging Dance for the purpose of outfitting a war party. The War Dance followed a declaration of war. A dance of thanksgiving marked the return of a successful war party.

⁵ *History of the Mission*, I, 104-106.



The Iroquois Confederacy

"A mighty thing, this our Great Peace. Have you, of across the water, had a greater vision?"

—William E. Yager, Orite of Adequentaga¹

WHEN WILLIAM PENN first came to America in 1682, the Delawares occupied the soil of southeastern Pennsylvania, but their political overlords were the Five Nations, the Iroquois Confederacy, whose homeland was in upstate New York. The Iroquois, as a result of conquests made during their long war for survival, which culminated in the dispersal of the Susquehannocks in 1675, laid claim to extensive territories of which the lands in Pennsylvania were a part. Since it was the political and military genius of the Iroquois that gave them their principal influence upon our history, this chapter will concern itself chiefly with that part of their culture.

The Iroquois and the Delawares were both superior examples of Stone Age man, but there were great differences between them. The Delawares had what is called an "atomistic" society, that is, one in which local communities were completely independent, each being subject to its own laws only. The Iroquois, on the other hand, had

¹ (Oneonta, N. Y., 1953), 90.

in their confederacy a political organization of the highest maturity. It was a federal union of five distinct Indian nations, each of which retained its sovereignty almost intact, without, however, weakening the integrity of the whole. In spite of individual differences in outlook and interest, and frequent disagreements in policy, the five nations as a whole possessed a strong sense of national identity.

When Champlain in 1609 first met the Iroquois in battle (in this instance a body of Mohawk warriors protected with wooden armor), he praised them in a soldierly way: "I saw the enemy come out of their barricade, nearly 200 men, strong and robust to look at, coming slowly toward us with a dignity and assurance that pleased me very much."²

The Iroquois at that time were by no means the dominant Indian power that Pennsylvania found them to be three quarters of a century later, yet the "dignity and assurance" which Champlain saw in them was not military bluff. Many early writers commented on this Iroquois trait. It did not come from any difference in blood strain. The Iroquois practice of adopting prisoners precluded any specialization of inherited characteristics. Nor was it the result of a marked superiority in culture, except in the field of government. They had no secret weapon. Technologically, they were Stone Age people like their neighbors.

What set them apart and gave them assurance was, above everything else, their superior political organization. They had also the advantage of a sound military position resting on the mountains flanking Lake Ontario and the St. Lawrence River. In addition, they had a religion that taught them they were a people chosen by the Great Spirit to lead all men (by the scruff of the neck if necessary) into a world-wide league of peace.

As the Five Nations are the most potent among our Western Indians [wrote Christian Frederick Post], they are also the wisest among all the rest. They have their settled Maxims of Government as well as other Nations; & their Political School is at Onondago. Their first Principles are to bring all the other Nations, if not under an absolute Dependency, at least under a certain Submission. The means they make use of to come to these Ends are sometimes Overt Force sometimes Treaties and Alliances. Prudence & Circumspection are their Guides.³

² Annie Nettleton Bourne (trans.), *The Voyages and Explorations of Samuel de Champlain*, 2 vols. (Toronto, 1911), I, 211.

³ Post, *Observations Accompanying Journal*, January 19, 1759, Division of Public Records, Pennsylvania Historical and Museum Commission, Harrisburg.

THE LONGHOUSE

The Iroquois called themselves *Kanonsionni*, "People of the Longhouse," using a familiar figure taken from their housekeeping. They, like the Susquehannocks, lived in long, rectangular, bark-covered houses, each with its central corridor, its hearths, and its several families under the general superintendence of an elder matron of the lineage.

The longhouse was a good symbol, calling to mind as it did both the geography and the government of the Confederacy. The five independent peoples of which it was composed, each speaking a dialect of a common Iroquoian tongue, were seated in a string of villages along a trail—at one time a warpath but after confederation known as the Ambassadors' Road—which crossed northern New York from near Schenectady to the Genesee River. From east to west—as the names of rivers and lakes in that region remind us—they were the Mohawk, Oneida, Onondaga, Cayuga, and Seneca nations.

Each nation was virtually independent, having its own council, just as each family in the longhouse had its separate fire. The homely image of the longhouse brought to mind also their highly advanced (and to us surprisingly modern) concept of democratic rule. The authority of the Great Council (the central government) came from the homes of the people. On the death of a chief, the head matron of his lineage consulted the matrons of other longhouses before appointing his successor to the clan council. The chiefs of the several clans made up each nation's council, and these same chiefs represented their nation on the Great Council of the Confederacy.

The federal congress or Great Council was often known as the Onondaga Council because it met at Onondaga (Syracuse, New York), the principal seat of the Onondaga nation whose territory lay in the geographical center of the League. Meetings were held at least once a year, and oftener if pressing business (matters of peace and war) arose. When Conrad Weiser, Pennsylvania's representative, carried peace messages to the Iroquois, he sent advance notice to Onondaga; and from that place runners were dispatched to both ends of the Longhouse to summon the council chiefs to meet him when he arrived.

In the Onondaga Council, each member nation had certain privileges and responsibilities. The Mohawks, for instance, had a council veto. The Onondagas provided the presiding officer, Atotarho (Wathatarho, Thadodaho), who was also the Head Chief of the Confederacy; and their chiefs as a body were the steering committee, "tending the fire," which meant preparing the agenda and, in the absence of the Council, attending to necessary business. The Senecas appointed the two war chiefs of the Confederacy.

The role of the federal council was to harmonize, if that were possible, the often conflicting interests of the different nations in the Confederacy. Each nation had its own customs, language (a dialect of the common tongue), and international problems. The Mohawks faced east, the Senecas west, and their friends as well as their enemies were not always the same. In time of great crisis, if feelings ran high and unanimity in the council was impossible (as happened during the American Revolution, when both the Americans and the British solicited Iroquois aid), each member nation was permitted to go its own way, even though it meant that different parts of the Confederacy for a time might be indirectly at war with one another.

In the Great Council, each national delegation voted as a unit. It was a council rule that no important matter should be debated on the day it was first brought up. This was intended not only to prevent snap judgments, but also to give the chiefs in each delegation time to come to agreement among themselves and appoint a speaker to present their united views before the assembly.

The government, though democratic in spirit, was not a pure democracy in form. The chiefs held office by hereditary right. On the death of a chief, the matrons of his line selected his successor from the same lineage, usually a brother or nephew (a sister's son) of the deceased but not his own son. Certain lineages (and they alone) had title to chiefships; others were without direct representation on the council. But, the population being small and the sense of social responsibility high, the selection of a chief was thoroughly talked over before any appointment was made, and it usually represented the general will.

The chiefs' council (whether on the national or confederate level) was much like a modern cabinet. It had responsibility for co-ordinating the affairs of the nation or the League and for making recommendations, but it had no authority beyond what came by concurrence with the council of warriors and women, in other words, with the general public.

The political position of women among the Iroquois has always astonished white men. The matrons did not, after appointing the chiefs, retire modestly into the political shadows. Scaroyady, the Half King, in 1756 asserted that "women have a great influence on our young Warriors. . . . It is no new thing to take women into our councils particularly amongst the Senecas." Cornplanter in 1790 said that "in the Seneca nation the women have as much to say in council

as the men have, and in all important business have equal authority. . . ."⁴

Iroquois women did not occupy titled positions on the League Council, but their political influence was profound. For one thing, they had their own councils, choosing representatives and spokesmen as circumstances required. For another, important women—"the Ladies of the Council," as the French called them—sat with the chiefs in council. They listened to the discussions and sometimes took part in them. Often their wishes prevailed, as when the Seneca women, during the crisis of 1794, pressed for peace with the United States and constrained Cornplanter to speak their will.⁵ From the chiefs' councils they carried discussion to women's councils or the council of warriors and women. Finally they went into action, exerting their immense prestige among their kin to see that the national will was carried out.

These civil chiefs (as distinct from the war chiefs) were known as *royaneh*, "lords," and were treated with high respect, but they put on no airs. *Noblesse oblige*. They were often poorer than the people about them. It was a point of honor for them to share, or give away, whatever they possessed.

The Onondaga Council had no police to enforce its wishes. It ruled by consent, the chiefs relying on the matrons who had appointed them to move public opinion. There were other channels of pressure, but this was the main one. For example, if the Onondaga Council decided to enter peace negotiations with a former enemy, such as the Catawbas, it was necessary to hold the young men back from their scheduled war raids. The chiefs consulted the matrons, and the matrons broadcast the news through the longhouses, using their personal influence to keep the young men at home. Thus we see that, as John Collier writes in *The Indians of the Americas*, "authority flowed upward, from the smallest and most organic units. . . ."⁶ Through the same channels that had put the chiefs in power, their combined wisdom was filtered back to the people.

Between the chiefs' council and the populace there were many channels of communication. There were councils at all levels, in all places, both men's councils and women's councils, family councils, councils of warriors, councils of elders. Frequently these subsidiary councils chose spokesmen to represent them before the Great Council.

⁴ Edmund B. O'Callaghan and Berthold Fernow (eds.), *Documents Relative to the Colonial History of the State of New-York*, 15 vols. (Albany, 1853-1887), VII, 103; Pennsylvania, *House Journal, 1815-1816*, Appendix, 37.

⁵ See Donald H. Kent and Merle H. Deardorff (eds.), "John Adlum on the Allegheny: Memoirs for the Year 1794," *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography*, LXXXIV (1960), 456.

⁶ *Indians of the Americas*, 201.

And the chiefs of the Great Council influenced public opinion by reversing the process and letting their advice percolate through these lesser councils to the level of the family and the individual.

"From family council to town, to tribe, to confederacy and down again there were regular steps in a chain of administration. . . .," writes Dr. William N. Fenton. "Their confederacy was but a League of ragged villages, as Franklin said of it, but it worked better than any other in the colonies."⁷

The member nations of the Confederacy, in their official relations with one another, adopted the familiar terms of a matrilineal society founded on ties of kinship. There were three Elder Brothers: the Mohawks, Senecas, and Onondagas. The Mohawks were known as Keepers of the Eastern Door, the Senecas as Keepers of the Western Door, and the Onondagas tended the council fire in the middle, the Fire That Never Dies. The Younger Brothers were the Oneidas, affiliated with the Mohawks, and the Cayugas, affiliated with the Senecas. Two more Younger Brothers were added later, the Tuscaroras and the Delawares, who were adopted "on the cradleboard."

THE FOUNDING LEGEND

The Five Nations were united in reverence for two culture heroes, Deganawidah and Hiawatha, the traditional founders of the Confederacy, whose words were treasured as revelations from the Creator.

There is no explicit record of the founding of the Confederacy. The "Hiawatha Belt," now in the custody of the New York State Museum at Albany, has been traditionally regarded as a contemporary record of the founding. Scientific examination has shown, however, that its beads were strung together in their present form, probably in the eighteenth century, from several earlier wampum belts. The design is interesting as an ancient symbol of the League, but the belt itself is not so old.

The coming together of these five nations in the Iroquois Confederacy was not a single act of creation at a determinable moment in time. The "completed cabin" (the Longhouse) was probably the culmination of a long process of development during which smaller leagues had been formed. A committee of Iroquois chiefs in 1900 set the date of the final act of union as 1390. Horatio Hale, who worked for years among the Iroquois, thought the League had been founded about the middle of the fifteenth century. Some recent scholars have set the date as late as 1570 or even 1630. Such dating seems untenable,

⁷"Long-Term Trends of Change Among the Iroquois," in Verne F. Ray (ed.), *Cultural Stability and Cultural Change* (Seattle, 1957), 32.

for the *Jesuit Relations* of the seventeenth century refer repeatedly to the "completed cabin" as something not only beyond the memory of man, but as "of the greatest antiquity." The Relation of 1654 quotes a Mohawk Indian as saying, "We, the five Iroquois Nations, compose but one cabin; we maintain but one fire; and we have, from time immemorial [*de tout temps*], dwelt under one and the same roof."⁸

The founding of the Confederacy was described in a powerful and beautiful legend which they held sacred. It was their Bible. Although it is in part a product of the popular imagination, it is important historically both for the core of truth contained in it and for the influence it exerted on later Iroquois history. The ideal it contained of a peaceful world and the practical means it proposed to attain that end inspired men with a depth of devotion that, even in these days of fervid nationalism, can hardly be equaled. It gave to their wars something of the complexion of religious crusades. "The Master of Life fights for us," they said to the Eries.

The Iroquois believed in the divine origin of their League. As the legend runs, Deganawidah's mother was a virgin through whom the Great Spirit, in compassion for mankind, became incarnate, bringing to earth a message of "Peace and Power": peace, that is, based on law and justice, and backed by sufficient military power to make such a peace prevail.

In the beginning, it is said, Deganawidah won Hiawatha (from whom Longfellow got the name, though not the adventures, of his hero) as his first disciple and sent him out to announce the Good News of Peace and Power among the neighboring Iroquois. There followed a long political campaign. The principal obstacle was Atotarho, according to legend a tyrant whose body had seven crooks in it and whose head was covered with snakes instead of hair. In the end, Hiawatha (whose name means "He Who Combs") combed the snakes out of Atotarho's hair, and the union was completed on the shore of Onondaga Lake. Deganawidah there planted the Tree of Peace and presented to his people (according to the legend) a body of laws, which are sometimes known as the "Constitution of the Five Nations." In its legal aspect, the Confederacy became known as *Kayenerenkhowa*, the Great Peace.

The legend is full of familiar but unforgettable images, symbols of man's hope for a world in which, as a later Iroquois expressed it, "The land shall be beautiful, the river shall have no more waves, one may go everywhere without fear." The Tree of Peace was seen as a great white pine "rising to meet the sun" (the Eye of the Creator),

⁸ Thwaites (ed.), *Jesuit Relations*, XLI, 87.

with branches representing the law and white (i. e., living) roots extending to the Four Quarters of the earth so that men everywhere might be able to trace peace to its source. Above the tree was the Eagle That Sees Afar, symbol of "preparedness," watching the horizon to warn peace-loving people of approaching danger.

The population of the Five Nations was small. According to a recent estimate, it was never more than twelve or fifteen thousand men, women, and children. How can their influence over such vast areas and such large populations as acknowledged their authority be explained? The answer is to be found in a combination of circumstances, these among others:



1. They had a driving economic motive to expand, as George T. Hunt has shown in *The Wars of the Iroquois*, once the fur trade had made their survival dependent on gaining access to territories not yet denuded of beaver.
2. They held a strategic military position among the mountains flanking the St. Lawrence River and Lake Ontario.
3. They had the advantage of a strong political organization, which enabled them to act together when necessary and to take the long view in their plans.
4. They had a highly-developed agriculture, with large corn surpluses which they stored to carry them over emergencies.
5. They were wise enough to know when to bury the hatchet and turn to negotiations.
6. Holding the balance of power in America between the English and the French, they made good use of their bargaining power.
7. Their religion gave them unity and a purpose: to make the Great Peace prevail.

Whether there was an element of self-deception in their warring for peace is not the question here. We note merely that the Iroquois had a sense of mission which nerved them—as it nerved Cromwell's Ironsides and those who sang "John Brown's Body"—to win victories.

It is easy to see that not all the actions of the Five Nations were in harmony with Deganawidah's ideal. But the ideal was nevertheless there, and the course of early American history bears frequent witness to it.

They proclaim [wrote one of the Jesuit missionaries] that they wish to unite all the nations of the earth and to hurl the hatchet so far into the depths of the earth that it shall never again be

seen in the future; that they wish to place an entirely new Sun in the Heavens, which shall never again be obscured by a single cloud; that they wish to level all the mountains, and remove all the falls from the rivers—in a word, that they wish peace. Moreover, as an evidence of the sincerity of their intentions, they declare that they are coming—women, and children, and old men—to deliver themselves into the hands of the French,—not so much in the way of hostages for their good faith as to begin to make only one Earth and one Nation of themselves and us.⁹

The French chronicler went on to tell how the Iroquois followed up their peace proposals by sending a large delegation, to the number of thirty, bearing gifts of no less than a hundred belts of wampum, some of them more than a foot wide. But while on their journey they were ambushed by France's Algonquin Indian allies. Some of the peace party were killed, others were captured, and the rest fled.

"Thus the grand project of this Embassy has vanished in smoke," concluded the missionary, "and instead of the peace which it was bringing us, we have on our hands a more cruel war than before. . . ."¹⁰

DREAMS

One of the best known Indian stories in Pennsylvania is that of the dreams exchanged by Shickellamy, the Iroquois representative at the Forks of the Susquehanna, and Conrad Weiser, Pennsylvania's interpreter. The tradition is that one day, as the two were traveling together over the Susquehanna Indian Path opposite the Isle of Que (Selinsgrove), Shickellamy said: "I have had a dream. I dreamed that you gave me a new rifle."

Conrad Weiser, who owed much of his success in Indian negotiations to a strict observance of Indian custom, now did what religion and etiquette demanded. He gave the rifle. But he added expectantly, "I, too, have had a dream. I dreamt that you gave me that island in the river."

We are told that Shickellamy, the perfect diplomat, fulfilled Weiser's dream. But he said, "I will never dream with you again."

Stories of such dreams were popular among white men in the woods two hundred years ago, and they were told in various localities about many different people. One comes from upstate New York, with Chief Hendrick of the Mohawks and Sir William Johnson dreaming a scarlet uniform against a large grant of Indian lands. Whatever liberties with the truth may have been in these particular tales, they

⁹ *Ibid.*, XLIX, 137.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, 147.

were a natural outgrowth of an old Iroquois custom, one which we see reflected in a curious memorandum appended to one of Conrad Weiser's Indian journals: "PS to buy a wooden pipe with a Civerin [covering?] over it and the best I Can. to answer Saghsidowas dream."¹¹

Such items as these, amusing when taken out of their social and religious context, are survivals of what was at one time an important (and surprisingly modern) Iroquois belief, namely, that the health of the mind—and the body as well, since the one is dependent on the other—is achieved through the fulfillment of desires revealed in dreams.

The cure of the sick was believed in many cases to depend on the satisfaction of dream wishes. Father Jerome Lalemant wrote in 1647: "The Savages know not what it is to refuse what another has dreamed ought to be done for his health. This law is common throughout the countries of America of which we have knowledge."¹²

The belief in dreams was most dramatically expressed in what the Jesuits, who had frequent opportunity to observe it, called the annual "Festival of the Demon of Dreams." The Iroquois themselves called it *Ononharoia*, the "Feast of Fools" or "Turning the Brain Upside Down." During the three days and nights of the festival, people went from cabin to cabin guessing and fulfilling one another's dreams, a thing that was not always easy to do, for the dreamers were forbidden to tell their dreams outright. They could only give a hint or act out the dream in charades.

We read in the *Jesuit Relations* for 1656:

It would be cruelty, nay, murder, not to give a man the subject of his dream; for such a refusal might cause his death. Hence, some see themselves stripped of their all, without any hope of retribution; for, whatever they thus give away will never be restored to them, unless they themselves dream, or pretend to dream, of the same thing. But they are, in general, too scrupulous to employ simulation, which would, in their opinion, cause all sorts of misfortunes. Yet there are some who overcome their scruples, and enrich themselves by a shrewd piece of deception.¹³

Quaker missionaries to the Senecas 160 years ago thought the Iroquois respect for dreams was nothing but a primitive superstition. Today they would be less contemptuous. It is now recognized that the Iroquois theory of dreams was, as a modern psychologist has called it, "basically psychoanalytic," and that it anticipated Sigmund Freud. Father Paul Ragueau in 1648 described the theory in language which might have been used by Freud himself:

¹¹ Wallace, *Conrad Weiser*, 151.

¹² Thwaites (ed.), *Jesuit Relations*, XXXI, 133.

¹³ *Ibid.*, XLII, 165, 167.

In addition to the desires that we generally have that are free,—or, at least, voluntary in us,—[and] which arise from a previous knowledge of some goodness that we imagine to exist in the thing desired, the Hurons [and, he might have added, the Iroquois] believe that our souls have other desires, which are, as it were, inborn and concealed. . . .

Now they believe that our soul makes these natural desires known by means of dreams, which are its language. Accordingly, when these desires are accomplished, it is satisfied; but, on the contrary, if it be not granted what it desires, it becomes angry, and not only does not give its body the good and the happiness that it wished to procure for it, but often it also revolts against the body, causing various diseases, and even death.¹⁴

Applying the psychoanalyst's technique to Iroquois dreams, Dr. A. F. C. Wallace, in "Dreams and Wishes of the Soul," comes to some interesting conclusions about Iroquois character. He finds that Iroquois dreams, as reported by early writers,

held a prevailingly anxious tone, ranging from nightmare fantasies of torture to the nagging need to define the unconscious wish and satisfy it before some disaster occurs. . . .

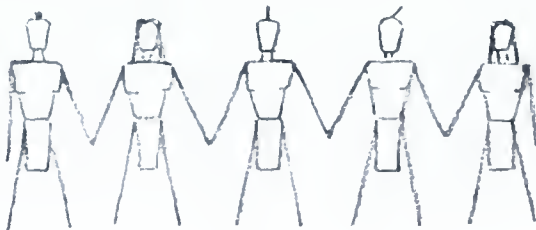
. . . The community rallies round the dreamer with gifts and ritual. The dreamer is fed; he is danced over; he is rubbed with ashes; he is sung to; he is given valuable presents; he is accepted as a member of a medicine society. . . .

This observation suggests that the typical Iroquois male, who in his daily life was a brave, generous, active, and independent spirit, nevertheless cherished some strong, if unconscious, wishes to be passive, to beg, to be cared for. . . .

The culture of dreams may be regarded as a useful escape-valve in Iroquois life. In their daily affairs, Iroquois men were brave, active, self-reliant, and autonomous; they cringed to no one and begged for nothing. But no man can balance forever on such a pinnacle of masculinity, where asking and being given are unknown. Iroquois men dreamt; and, without shame, they received the fruits of their dreams and their souls were satisfied.¹⁵

¹⁴ *Ibid.*, XXXIII, 189.

¹⁵ "Dreams and Wishes of the Soul: A Type of Psychoanalytic Theory Among the Seventeenth Century Iroquois," *American Anthropologist*, LX (1958), 247.





The Beaver Wars

THE FUR TRADE

WHAT THE IROQUOIS might have made of themselves if they had been given time to develop naturally under their own laws, it is impossible to say.¹ As it turned out, the coming of the Europeans changed their mode of life and put them—as it did all other Indians—on the defensive. At first contact, the Indians recognized the superiority of the white man's tools: axes and hoes, needles and kettles, and, above all, firearms. A brisk trade sprang up between the two races, much earlier than is usually supposed. It has been calculated that before the arrival of the *Mayflower* in 1620 not less than five hundred and possibly more than six hundred voyages had been made to New England alone.² Quite early the Indian found himself dependent on the white man's goods not only for comfort but also for survival.

¹ In this chapter the author has incorporated passages from his article, "The Iroquois: A Brief Outline of Their History," printed as an introduction to Lawrence H. Leder (ed.), *The Livingston Indian Records* (Gettysburg, 1956), 15-28.

² Donald F. X. Connolly, "A Chronology of New England Catholicism Before the Mayflower Landing," *American Catholic Historical Society of Philadelphia, Records*, LXX (1959), 3.

The Iroquois were an agricultural people and good farmers. Their cornfields were rich. But the white trader would not accept corn in exchange for guns, powder, and broadcloth. He demanded furs for the European market.

The monstrous effects of the white man's lust for peltries can hardly be exaggerated. Writing of the Dutch at Albany, Allen W. Trelease has this to say: "In almost every context the fur trade reigned supreme at Fort Orange. From the company directors down to the lowliest Beverwyck trader the primary object of Indian policy, foreign policy, land policy, and trade policy was to facilitate the flow of peltry toward the Hudson."³ The Indian, in order to buy what he needed, had to devote his best energies to hunting. When his own territory was exhausted, he went farther afield, coming into conflict with hunters of other tribes, and there ensued the catastrophe of national wars.

The change in mode of living affected all Indians adversely. To the Iroquois it brought almost immediate disaster. Though their population was not large, intensive hunting on a national scale soon depleted their hunting grounds. By 1640 scarcely a beaver was to be found between the Hudson River and the Genesee. The Iroquois, to save themselves, had either to find new hunting grounds or to capture a position as middlemen in the trade between the white men and the Indians of the far north and west where the best hunting lay.

THE IROQUOIS WAR FOR SURVIVAL

The Susquehanna Valley and the rich hunting territories extending westward to the valleys of the Allegheny and Ohio rivers, with which the name of the Iroquois was later to be associated, were in 1640 not accessible to them. The Longhouse was surrounded by powerful and jealous neighbors. The Mahicans were pressing hard from the east. To the south were the Susquehannocks, intent on protecting their trade with the Dutch and Swedes at the mouth of the Schuylkill and with the English on Chesapeake Bay. The Wenro, a small people west of the Iroquois, had in 1638 been pushed out, most of them taking refuge with the Hurons; but their removal had brought the Iroquois into direct contact with more powerful enemies, the Neutrals and the Eries, the latter of whom alone could muster more warriors than the Iroquois. To the north were the Petuns (or Tobacco Nation) and the Hurons, the latter a large and powerful people, the greatest Indian merchants on the continent, through whose activities as middlemen the French at Montreal held a monopoly of the trade with the Indians beyond the Great Lakes.

³ *Indian Affairs in Colonial New York* (Ithaca, 1960), 137.

That was the tough market the Iroquois had to break into or perish.

The greatest obstacle was New France. The French were determined to suffer no breach in their monopoly of the northern fur trade. It brought wealth to the colony and at the same time kept France's Indian allies dependent on her. As long as she held that monopoly, she could control her allies by threatening to deny them trade goods. Repeatedly the Iroquois sought to make a commercial treaty with the Hurons. The Hurons themselves were not averse to it, but the French found ways to block it.

Desperate, the Iroquois took to piracy, as the English had done on the Spanish Main. They raided French trade routes on the St. Lawrence and Ottawa rivers, ambushing Huron fur fleets bound for Montreal. French Canadian history and folklore are full of such incidents. So successful were these raids that the French in alarm reconsidered their policy. In 1645 they, with their Huron allies, made peace with the Iroquois. It was just such a treaty as the Iroquois had hoped for, containing the right commercial terms. Deganawidah had said that friends should "eat out of the same bowl." Kiotsaeton, Mohawk spokesman at the treaty, made this explicit. The Hurons were to trade with the Iroquois.

The treaty was soon put to the test. Out of the northwest there came next summer a Huron fur fleet of more than eighty canoes—"the greatest fur fleet in the history of New France,"⁴ as George T. Hunt describes it. Unmolested by the Iroquois, the fleet descended to Montreal. Strangely, the Iroquois were allowed no part in the trade, though the high price of furs at Albany might have made it worth the Hurons' while to give Iroquois traders a middleman's cut. The Mohawks, enraged at this plain breach of the commercial terms of the treaty, sent war belts to their Brothers, the Senecas and Onondagas.

The Five Nations were in a strong military position in relation to the French. The Longhouse flanked French trade routes to the west, and, in case of French attack, the Iroquois had at their backs a range of wooded mountains into which they could retire by secret paths. Within easy reach of them, too, were the Dutch, and later the English, to supply them with guns and powder. But the French made up in diplomacy whatever disadvantage they suffered in terrain. They tightened their hold on the nations surrounding the Iroquois, and, by appealing to divergent interests among the different nations in the Longhouse itself, attempted to tear the Confederacy apart.

⁴ *The Wars of the Iroquois: A Study in Intertribal Trade Relations* (Madison, Wisconsin, 1960), 83.

The Hurons in 1647 made an aggressive alliance with the Susquehannocks, who agreed to lift the hatchet when the Hurons gave the word. To the Iroquois, that sounded like the closing of a deathtrap. The Hurons did more. Taking advantage of the looseness of the tie that held the Five Nations together, they sent an embassy to negotiate a separate peace with the Onondagas and the Cayugas. Such a peace, if concluded, would have broken the Confederacy in two, leaving the Mohawks and Oneidas at one end of the Longhouse and the Senecas at the other to shift for themselves. Thoroughly alarmed, the Mohawks and Senecas dispatched warriors to break Huron communications with the Onondagas and the Susquehannocks. They concerted further plans which took a little time to mature.

The year 1648 passed with inconclusive fighting. In the summer a large Huron trading fleet was brought successfully through a Mohawk blockade—with severe loss to the Mohawks. But in the autumn of that year the Mohawks and Senecas quietly sent a thousand hunters up into the woods of Ontario. At a given time, some months later, these hunters came together. At early dawn on March 16, 1649, they emerged from the snow-covered woods before the Huron town of St. Ignace, stormed and took it, and set it on fire. Three of the inhabitants escaped, making their way to St. Louis, three miles away, where they gave the alarm. But by sunrise the Iroquois were before St. Louis, and by nine o'clock it, too, was in flames.

A spirited Huron counterattack persuaded the Iroquois not to press their good fortune too far. Instead of attacking the principal Huron stronghold, Ste. Marie, they returned to their own country. But their work had been done. Behind them they left panic. The Huron people fled, burning their villages as they went. Some spent a winter of near starvation on Christian Island in the Georgian Bay. Some fled to the Petuns (Tobacco Nation), their near neighbors to the southwest. Others took refuge among the Neutrals west of Niagara. A large number made their way to the country of the Eries. Still others found shelter under the Tree of Peace, a whole Huron village seating itself among the Senecas.

More important for the subsequent history of the United States, one band made its way north to mingle with the Ottawas on Manitoulin Island. This last group of Hurons, best known now under their own name of Wyandot, in the end robbed the Iroquois of some of the hoped-for fruits of victory. These Wyandots moved to the north of Lake Superior and there continued the role of middlemen in the French fur trade. Later they came south and settled in the vicinity of Detroit and Sandusky, where in the eighteenth century, with

Iroquois approval, they became hosts to the renewed Delaware nation in Ohio.

The attack on Huronia was only the beginning of the Beaver Wars, which for the Iroquois had become a war for survival. They disposed of whole nations at a blow, not by massacring their people, but by destroying main centers of resistance and so causing their enemies' dispersion. In such manner the Petuns were overthrown in December, 1649, the Neutrals in 1650-1651, and the Eries after a more protracted struggle which lasted from 1654 to 1656.

"It is therefore a marvel," we read in the Jesuit Relation for 1659-1660, "that so few people work such great havoc and render themselves so redoubtable to so large a number of tribes, who, on all sides, bow before this conqueror." In the same connection the Relation observes, "But what is more astonishing is, that they actually hold dominion for five hundred leagues around, although their numbers are very small. . . ."⁵

War with the Mahicans and the Susquehannocks was a different matter. The Mahicans were good for the long pull. As early as 1626 they had driven the Mohawks from their Lower Castle (as the Dutch called this palisaded village on the Mohawk River east of Schoharie Creek). The last great battle in the Mahican War, at Hoffman's Ferry, in which the Mohawks were victorious, did not come until 1669. Peace with the Mahicans was concluded in 1673.

DEFEAT OF THE SUSQUEHANNOCKS

To the Susquehannocks on the lower Susquehanna, the loss of their Huron allies was offset by an alliance made with the English in Maryland, with whom they had been enjoying a considerable trade. In 1661 Maryland made a treaty with the Susquehannocks, aimed at the Senecas, Keepers of the Iroquois' Western Door, who bore the brunt of the Beaver Wars in this quarter. Maryland sent fifty men to strengthen the Susquehannock fort.

The Seneca attack of 1663 on the Susquehannocks, though launched with what was for the American scene a very considerable army (some eight hundred men), was easily repulsed. The next year Maryland formally declared war on the Senecas. Further help came to the Susquehannocks from the Delawares and also from the Shawnees. The latter until the end of the seventeenth century were to be a thorn in the side of the Iroquois.

The war dragged on for many years. The Susquehannocks seemed indestructible. They had a fort on the lower Susquehanna River,

⁵ Thwaites (ed.), *Jesuit Relations*, XLV, 207.

probably at this period on the west bank, opposite Washington Boro, Pennsylvania. It was equipped with bastions and mounted artillery. Their warriors, who had behind them a strong military tradition, were not to be destroyed at one stroke. They not only turned back the Seneca force in 1663 but repeatedly raided the Iroquois country and for years had the best of this desolating war.

But their day passed. Continuous warfare and the ravages of smallpox ate away their numbers. Worst of all, they were deprived of their main source of arms and ammunition when in 1674 Maryland made a separate peace with the Senecas and declared war on her former ally.

Next year saw the end of the Susquehannocks. In 1675 they ceased to exist as a military power. No adequate records have been preserved of this last conquest, and we cannot verify the tradition that the Iroquois stormed and captured the great Susquehannock fort. But the outcome is well enough known. The Susquehannocks, like the Hurons, Petuns, Neutrals, and Eries, were dispersed. Some of them went south, only to suffer further humiliation at the hands of Virginia and Maryland. At Albany in 1679 the Oneidas thanked Maryland and Virginia for their assistance. “. . . y^e Susquehannes are all destroyed,” they said, “for w^h. wee Return you many thanks. . . .”⁶

Meantime some of the Susquehannocks had gone north and were adopted by their conquerors. A few established themselves (with Iroquois sanction) in the Susquehanna Valley at Conestoga near the present city of Lancaster.

So it came about that, six years before the Quaker William Penn received the charter of his province, the Iroquois had established the Tree of Peace here. It was to be Pennsylvania's Indian policy to help the Iroquois tend it.

BALANCE OF POWER

During the first half of the eighteenth century, the Iroquois held the “balance of power” between the French and the English in America. To see what this means, it is necessary first to understand the Montreal Treaty of 1701 and what led up to it.

By the Montreal Treaty the Iroquois allied themselves, on certain terms, with the French. They adopted this policy, which marked a turning point in their history, because of the uneasiness they felt at the expansion in America not only of their old enemy, France, but also of their old ally, England. Against the French, who wanted a

⁶ Leder (ed.), *Livingston Indian Records*, 56.

monopoly of the fur trade, and against the English, who wanted Indian lands, the Iroquois knew they were not strong enough to stand alone. They felt their safety to lie in using the one rival as a counterweight to the other. In the Montreal Treaty they made that policy open and explicit.

France was, of course, the traditional enemy and in 1701 the more immediately dangerous of the two. We must go back a little to understand this. In the year 1666 New France, in order to punish the Iroquois for their raids on her fur fleets, launched two expeditions against the Confederacy. The first, under Daniel de Rémy, Sieur de Courcelle, was a failure; but the second, under the Marquis de Tracy, though it encountered few Indians (they having wisely vanished into the woods), burned villages and destroyed the stored corn. Peace was made the following year, but it was soon broken. In 1687 the Marquis de Denonville's invasion of the Seneca country with over three thousand men caused little loss of manpower to the Iroquois, although the destruction of vast quantities of corn (excitedly estimated at 1,200,000 bushels by Denonville) was crippling, at least for the moment. In reprisal, two years later, the Iroquois secretly penetrated New France to the gates of Montreal and at a signal emerged from the woods to devastate the country for many leagues about. The incident is remembered in Canada as the Massacre of Lachine—massacre, because the Indians, being unable to reach and destroy the enemy's stores of food as the French had done, killed or captured the crop producers, which achieved the same military objective: the weakening of the enemy's economy. In 1693 and 1696, under Count Frontenac, the French launched further punitive expeditions against the Iroquois. And so the pendulum swung, from reprisal to reprisal, each side continually getting hurt, but never mortally.

What the Iroquois wanted was not war but a better share of the fur trade. "In fine," wrote Father J. de Lamberville in 1684 of their war with the Miamis in the west, "they do not wage war save but to secure a good peace."⁷ What the French wanted was freedom from Iroquois terror. "An extraordinary thing," wrote Bacqueville de La Potherie, "that three or four thousand people should be able to make a whole new world tremble."⁸ The Lachine affair had so frightened the Hurons and Ottawas that the French thereafter found them impossible to control.

By this time the situation had reached a stalemate. The French had learned that they could not destroy the Iroquois. The Iroquois had

⁷ Edmund B. O'Callaghan (ed.), *The Documentary History of the State of New-York*, 4 vols. (Albany, 1849-1851), I, 133.

⁸ *Histoire de l'Amérique Septentrionale*, 4 vols. (Paris, 1722), IV, 147.

learned that it would be unwise to destroy the French: they were a good counterweight to the English. It was becoming apparent to both sides, French and Iroquois, that an accommodation was to be desired.

The English, getting wind of this rapprochement, did everything they could to stop it. They reminded the Iroquois—not very wisely—that they were “subjects” of the King of England. In this the English were mistaken. The Onondaga and Cayuga chiefs, when on August 2, 1684, they said, “Wee have put ourselves under the Great Sachim Charles that lives over the Great Lake,”⁹ meant only that they placed themselves under English protection in their conflict with the French, not that they surrendered either their sovereignty or their title to land. The merchants of Albany feared losing their monopoly of Iroquois trade. The province of New York feared losing Iroquois protection of her northern border. “Those Five nations,” wrote Governor Thomas Dongan in 1687, “are very brave & the awe & Dread of all y^e Indiyans in these Parts of America, and are a better defence to us, than if they were so many Christians.”¹⁰ The middle colonies, fearing war with France, did not want to lose the support of Iroquois manpower. “If we lose the Iroquois, we are gone. . . .,” wrote James Logan, Provincial Secretary of Pennsylvania, in 1702.¹¹

In the summer of 1701, what the English had feared came to pass. At Montreal the Five Nations made peace with the French and their Indian allies. The French invited the Iroquois to trade with them at Detroit. In return the Iroquois promised, in case of a Franco-British war, to remain neutral. But the Iroquois were not deserting their British allies. While one embassy was on its way to treat with the French in Montreal, another was quite honestly renewing the Chain of Friendship at Albany. By these two treaties, the Iroquois launched a new policy of armed neutrality between the English and the French as a means of holding the balance of power between them.

The importance to Pennsylvania of the Montreal Treaty was that in return for the promise of neutrality, the Iroquois stipulated that the French should *respect* that neutrality. In case of war with the English, the French were to “sit on their mats” (as far as the Iroquois were concerned), that is, they bound themselves not to cross the Iroquois borders.

Let us look forward a moment to see how this worked out. During the early years of the eighteenth century, Conrad Weiser in Pennsylvania and William Johnson in New York did much to confirm the

⁹ O’Callaghan (ed.), *Documentary History*, I, 402.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, 256.

¹¹ Edward Armstrong (ed.), *Correspondence Between William Penn and James Logan*, 2 vols. (Philadelphia, 1870-1872), I, 88.

"Ancient Union" of the Iroquois and the English; while, on behalf of the French, the Joncaires, father and sons, strove to preserve Iroquois neutrality in the worsening disputes between the two European rivals. When at last the French and Indian War broke out, the Five Nations, true to their treaty with France, remained neutral. There were, it is true, some scattered acts of partisanship, as when Senecas took part in raids on English settlements or when Mohawks danced the war dance with William Johnson. But officially Iroquois neutrality was maintained, and on the whole it worked to the advantage of the English colonies. When the French in 1753 landed at Presque Isle (Erie) on their way to establish forts on French Creek and the Allegheny, the Iroquois sent an impressive embassy, "the ladies of the Council" as the French described it, to protest. A year later Tanacharison, the Iroquois Half King in the Ohio Valley, sent the French three successive protests—the strongest deterrent the Iroquois knew short of a declaration of war. Thereafter the Iroquois exerted judicious pressure on their wards, the Delawares and Shawnees, who had joined the French and struck the English. At the Easton Treaty of 1758, the Iroquois made peace for the Delawares over their heads and brought the Indian war in Pennsylvania to an end.



Indian Refugees in Pennsylvania

THE PROBLEM OF THE SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY

THE DISPERSION of the Susquehannocks by the Iroquois in 1675 left the victors with a nearly insoluble problem. The valley of the Susquehanna River, which in its north and west branches flanked the southern quarter of the Longhouse and gave access to it, lay empty and defenseless. The Iroquois knew well enough that "power abhors a vacuum." If they themselves did not quickly fill this vacuum, others would, in particular the English of Maryland, Virginia, and (after 1681) Pennsylvania. The history of the Susquehanna River for the next hundred years is largely concerned with the attempt of the Five Nations to fill the vacuum and hold the valley.

They did not throw out colonies of their own people for that purpose. Their population was too small to permit colonization on any large scale, and what colonies they did throw out were for the most part in the newly-won Ohio country. The Seneca nation, after defeating the Neutrals and Eries, had occupied the country west to Niagara

and south to the upper Allegheny River and French Creek. Senecas and others of the Five Nations also sent hunting parties (some members of which settled and became permanent residents under the name of Mingoes) throughout the Upper Ohio Basin.

The Susquehanna Valley had to be filled another way. The Iroquois did it with displaced persons.

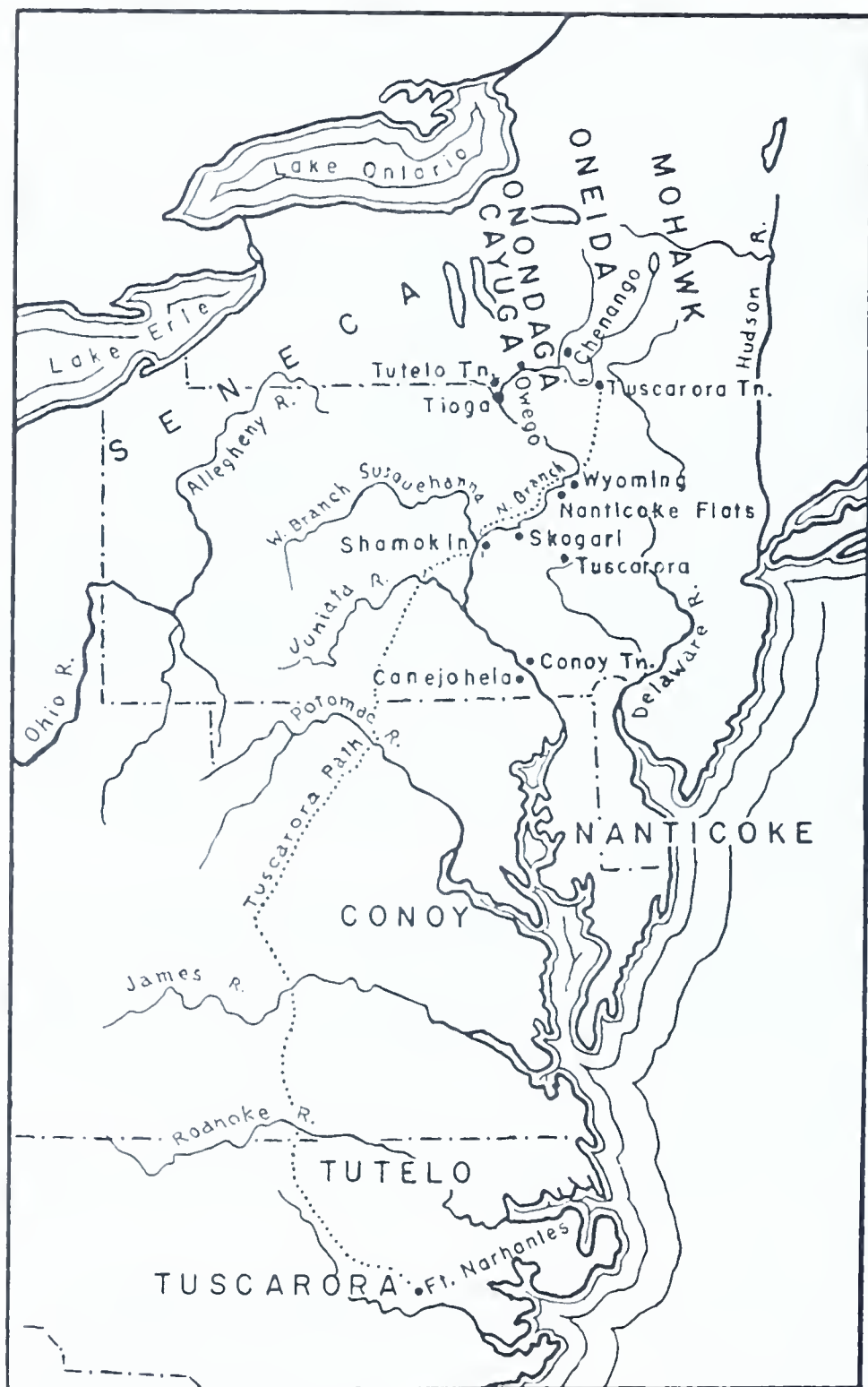
The term "displaced persons" was not in use among our forefathers in America, although the human problem it calls to mind was everywhere about them. They themselves, many of them, had suffered displacement in Europe and came to America to find freedom and security. It is one of the ironies of history that in their search for these things they should have found themselves constrained to deny them to the people "who came out of this ground." Everywhere on the frontier the Indians were being uprooted. The pressure of incoming white men—a pressure exerted sometimes through what the Indians called "pen and ink work" and sometimes by the cruder but franker method of powder and ball—forced whole tribes of Indians to leave their lands and seek refuge where they could find it.

Many of these homeless people turned to the Iroquois for help, and the Iroquois welcomed them. That was in accordance with Deganawidah's instruction to his people that aliens who traced the Great White Roots of Peace to their source should be welcomed and made to feel at home. The Confederacy offered the refugees shelter under the branches of the Tree of Peace, which extended over the Susquehanna Valley.

The placement of the refugees was not, however, a gesture of blind altruism. It was an act of enlightened self-interest. To have grateful allies in the Susquehanna Valley—at Conestoga, at the mouth of Conoy Creek, at Paxtang, Shamokin, Wyoming, Wyalusing, Sheshequin, Tioga, and the Great Bend—would help to keep the Southern Door of the Longhouse shut against white men, who were already hammering on it.

Christian Frederick Post (a Moravian missionary married to an Indian wife) understood this. In his "Observations" accompanying his second journal of 1758 to the Allegheny, he wrote of the Six Nations that:

. . . they settle these New Allies on the Frontiers of the White People and give them this as their Instruction. "Be Watchful that no body of the White People may come to settle near you. You must appear to them as frightful Men, & if notwithstanding they come too near give them a Push we will secure and defend you against them. . . ."



Movement of Refugee Peoples to the Iroquois Country

. . . The Chain of Union betwⁿ the several Indian Nations is of that nature, that if we have War with one of them, we have also war with them all.¹

THE CONOYS

Some confusion attends the history of the Conoy Indians, as C. A. Weslager notes, because "the word Nanticoke was loosely . . . applied to the Conoy before the Nanticoke proper made their appearance in the State."²

The two tribes, Conoy and Nanticoke, were closely related and may at one time have comprised one political family—as they were to do again later. But at the time of Maryland's founding in 1632, they were two distinct peoples, living on opposite shores of Chesapeake Bay; and the movements that brought them into Pennsylvania during the eighteenth century were different in time, place, and circumstance.

The Conoys or Ganawese, when Captain John Smith first visited America in 1607, were known as the Piscataway Indians. They lived in southern Maryland in the neighborhood of Piscataway Creek on the peninsula that separates Chesapeake Bay from the lower Potomac. Disturbed by the Susquehannocks, they left the Piscataway region and moved up the Potomac to an island at the site of Washington, D. C.

In 1701 they attended a treaty with William Penn at Philadelphia, and shortly afterwards, under the sponsorship of the Five Nations, they moved into Pennsylvania, settling at the old site which had been vacated by the Susquehannocks in the neighborhood of Washington Boro and naming it Conejohela, which means, according to J. N. B. Hewitt, "Kettle on a Long Upright Pole." The name survives on the west shore of the river in Canadochly Creek.

. . . our forefathers [said their chief, Old Sack, in a message to Governor George Thomas in 1743] came from Piscatua to an Island in Potowmeck, and from thence down to Philadelphia in Old Proprietor Penn's Time, in Order to shew their friendship to the Proprietor; That after their return they brought down all their Brothers from Potowmeck to Conejoholo, on the East side Sasquehannah, and built a town there.

That the Indians of the six Nations told 'em there was Land enough, they might chuse their place of Settlement any where about Sasquehannah.

That accordingly they thought fit to remove higher up Sasquehannah to the Conoy Town [at the mouth of Conoy Creek],

¹ Dated January 19, 1759. Division of Public Records, Pennsylvania Historical and Museum Commission.

² *The Nanticoke Indians: A Refugee Tribal Group in Pennsylvania* (Harrisburg, 1948), 4.

where they now live; And on their first settling, the Indians of the six Nations came down & made their fire, and all the great Men declared the fire of their Kindling in token of their approbation of their settling there; But that now the Lands all around them being settled by white People, their hunting is spoiled And they have been long advised by the six Nations to leave the place and go higher up the River and settle either at the Mouth of Conodogwinnet, Chiniotta [Juniata], or up at Shamokin.³

Once inside Pennsylvania, they continued their way northward, moving deeper into the Six Nations country. About 1718 they settled at the mouth of Conoy Creek (some two miles south of Bainbridge), a spot later made famous by Peter Bezaillon as the western terminus of Old Peter's Road. From that point, Conoy Town, they moved (about 1743) to an island at the mouth of the Juniata. We read in the Philadelphia Deed Book, I, No. 5, page 37 (under date of August 24, 1762): "that Island Situate at the mouth of the River Juniata . . . on which Island The said Conoy Nation afterwards [i.e., after leaving Conoy Town] was settled by their Uncles the Six Nations and from whence they directly removed some years Since to their present Habitation & Settlement at Otseningo [Chenango, near Binghamton, N. Y.] on the East Branches of the Susquehanna. . . ."

Just how "directly" they had moved from the Juniata to Otseningo is not certain. There are intermediate glimpses of Conoy Indians at Shamokin, Catawissa, Wyoming, Owego, and Chugnut. But we know that by 1758 they had become "one Nation" with the Nanticokes at Chenango, as appears in the minutes of the Easton Treaty for October 8 of that year.

THE NANTICOKES

The Nanticokes, an ancient people who were said to have invented witchcraft, had a reputation also as poisoners. "I have known Indians," writes John Heckewelder, "who firmly believed they [the Nanticokes] had people among them who could, if they pleased, destroy a whole army, by merely blowing their breath towards them."⁴ This reputation, which they themselves do not seem to have discouraged, may have been a protective device, like a porcupine's quills, for they were not by nature aggressive. David Zeisberger, who met them at Nanticoke in 1748, described them as "clever modest people."

They were of Algonkian stock, closely related to the Conoys and the Delawares. When John Smith saw the Nanticokes in 1608, they

³ Pennsylvania, *Colonial Records*, IV, 657.

⁴ *History, Manners, and Customs*, 92.

were living in villages on the Eastern Shore of Maryland at the mouth of the Nanticoke River and up along its reaches into Delaware. According to their own estimate, it was about the year 1680 (that is, shortly after the Iroquois conquest of the Susquehannocks) that they became "tributary" to the Iroquois. To be tributary did not mean that they were humiliated and denationalized. It meant that they accepted Iroquois protection, became loyal "Props to the Longhouse," and acknowledged that relationship by token gifts of wampum.

In the next century the Nanticokes, stung to reprisals by outrages which white men had committed against them, found themselves in trouble with the Maryland government. Looking for a way out, they sent agents in 1742 to negotiate at Shamokin with Shickellamy, the Iroquois vicegerent, for permission to move up into Pennsylvania, where they would be more immediately under the Confederacy's protection. Next year at Onondaga they presented their petition directly to the Great Council through Pennsylvania's Conrad Weiser as interpreter.

Already a body of them had settled at the mouth of the Juniata. At the Treaty of Lancaster in 1744, they presented a petition to the Pennsylvania authorities, asking for a safe conduct for others of their people whom they wished to bring from Maryland to Pennsylvania on the way towards the Six Nations home country. Four years later, in 1748, we find them moving in a body to the Wyoming Valley, where they settled on the Nanticoke Flats, site of the modern city of Nanticoke.

While there, they made seasonal excursions to the Eastern Shore to enjoy the sea food they were accustomed to. The Nanticoke Path may be traced today through the towns of Hazleton, Tamaqua, Reading, Honeybrook, Compass, Cochranville, Oxford, Elkton, and Calvert. It brought them to the Northeast River and the shores of Chesapeake Bay.

The Nanticoke Flats remained their home for five years. In 1753 they moved in a body—twenty-five canoe loads were seen to pass at one time—to Chenango at the southern door of the Longhouse. They were adopted into the Confederacy and accorded two chiefs to represent them at meetings of the Onondaga Council.

The Six Nations kept a paternal eye on these and all other Indians to whom they had promised asylum. During a conference at Johnson Hall in the Mohawk Valley, December, 1766, chiefs of the Six Nations spoke thus to Sir William Johnson:

We now desire your attention on behalf of our Children the Nanticoks, Canoys, and Delawares who have lately requested of us to lay their desires before you, and begged our Interest on

this occasion.—First that as their People who yet remain near the Sea Side, are in a very poor Situation, and desire to come & settle among the rest on the Six Nation's Land, we request, to this end, you will grant them Passports, as you have done to the Tuscaroras, and others formerly.⁵

THE TUSCARORAS

The Tuscaroras were an Iroquoian people whose towns and "castles" were in North Carolina on streams flowing east into Pamlico Sound. John Lawson, an early explorer and historian, knew them intimately and described them as mild and friendly. But, it being a recognized business among white men in those days to kidnap Tuscarora children and sell them as slaves, the Indians at length turned savagely on the whites and massacred them indiscriminately. John Lawson himself was captured in 1711 and put to death. The Tuscarora War which followed was not ended until 1713, when the last great Tuscarora fort, Narhantes, near Snow Hill in Greene County, North Carolina, was destroyed.

Some families headed north at once for the country of the Five Nations, with whom the Tuscaroras had been in touch by way of what the Iroquois called the Tuscarora Path. In 1714 the chiefs of the Five Nations informed Governor Robert Hunter at Albany that the "Tuscarore Indians are come to shelter themselves among the five nations they were of us and went from us long ago and are now returned . . . we desire you to look upon the Tuscarores that are come to live among us as our Children who shall obey our commands & live peaceably and orderly."⁶

The Tuscaroras were admitted to the Longhouse "on the cradle-board," as Seth Newhouse tells us, that is to say, under the sponsorship of one of the original Five Nations, behind whose delegates they sat at meetings of the Onondaga Council and spoke "with their voice." At first they were protégés of the Oneidas, later of the Senecas. The Tuscaroras are still in the Seneca country, on a reservation near Lewiston at the mouth of the Niagara Gorge. Their loyalty to the Confederacy is today made plain by the lead they are taking in the Iroquois national renaissance.

After the adoption of the Tuscaroras, the Five Nations became known as the Six Nations. At what precise date the change was made is not known. The first official mention of the Tuscaroras by name

⁵ James Sullivan, Alexander C. Flick, and Milton W. Hamilton (eds.), *Papers of Sir William Johnson*, 12 vols. to date (Albany, 1921-), XII (1957), 242.

⁶ O'Callaghan and Fernow (eds.), *Documents Relative to the Colonial History of the State of New-York*, V, 387.

as taking part in the affairs of the Confederacy was at Albany in 1722. But it is to be noted that as early as 1710 Iroquois chiefs visiting England, in their address to Queen Anne, referred to themselves as of the Six Nations.

It was ninety years before the migration of the Tuscaroras from North Carolina to the Iroquois country was completed. They moved in bands, at different times, at different rates of speed, and by different routes. They stopped "overnight" at points along the way. That is why their passage through Pennsylvania is marked by so many place names: Path Valley (after the Tuscarora Path) and Tuscarora Creek in Huntingdon and Juniata counties; another Tuscarora Creek in Wyoming County; a Tuscarora Post Office in Schuylkill County, and a village by that name in Juniata County; Tuscarora Mountain west of the Kittatinny; and Tuscarora Old Town, shown on early maps at the Great Bend in Susquehanna County.

We know from early documents that the Iroquois not only encouraged but actively superintended this migration. In 1765 they dispatched seven Tuscaroras south to bring away the last remnant of their people in North Carolina. These latter had sold their lands and with part of the proceeds bought horses for the long journey north. Setting out next spring, 160 or more of them under the guidance of two chiefs and an interpreter, they moved unmolested over what were now the white man's roads until they reached Harris' Ferry. There the Paxton Boys (who had murdered the Indians at Conestoga in 1763) were still operating. The Tuscaroras were plundered, losing among other things six horses. At Lackawanna (Pittston) the travelers divided into two parties, one going directly north to Tuscarora Town by the Lackawanna Path, while the other took a longer but easier route over the Great Warriors Path, which followed the Susquehanna River.

They had sent messengers ahead, in accordance with Indian custom, to let the Iroquois know at what time to expect them. The Iroquois not only made preparations to receive them but also sent agents to arrange for their comfort along the way. After the robberies at Harris' Ferry, it was necessary to provide transportation for their sick and aged. The emissaries of the Six Nations, Newallike and Aehkoluntzy along with others in five canoes, left a request among "the Indians everywhere along the Susquehanna," as the Moravian missionary at Wyalusing, John Jacob Schmick, noted on November 18, 1766, "to receive these poor Indians, send canoes from place to place for them, and provide them with corn so that they may get along all right. Our

Indians, accordingly, as soon as they hear of their arrival at Lechawachneck [Pittston] will send 10 canoes to them."⁷

THE TUTELOS

The Tutelos, described by John Lawson in their native environment as "tall, likely men," by David Zeisberger after their uprooting as "a degenerate remnant of thieves and drunkards," and more recently by James Mooney as "the most honest and bravest Indians Virginia ever knew," were a Siouan people who formerly lived in the Piedmont of Virginia and North Carolina.

During the seventeenth century, they were much knocked about by their neighbors, white and Indian. The Susquehannocks, turning south after their dispersion by the Iroquois in 1675, attempted to possess themselves of the Tutelo territory. The Tutelos, aided by Nathaniel Bacon and some two hundred Virginians, drove the Susquehannocks back. Whereupon these same Virginians, attracted by the Tutelos' great wealth in beaver skins, turned upon their allies. In the battle that ensued, the Tutelos drove the Virginians off, but with severe loss to themselves.

Worse than that, their country happened to be astride the Virginia Road, a path used by the Iroquois in raids against their own and the Tuscaroras' enemies. In consequence the Tutelos, whose numbers were dwindling, found themselves much harassed. To protect themselves, they retired for a time into the mountains at the headwaters of the Yadkin, and then came east to the Roanoke and Meherrin rivers, losing something of their cultural cohesion during these migrations. When at last in 1722, after many years of wandering, they made peace with the Iroquois, they saw that under the still-standing Tree of Peace lay their best hope of survival. They moved, accordingly, into Pennsylvania.

Conrad Weiser found them in 1744 at Shamokin. Four years later some of them moved farther up the North Branch to Skogary (Lapachpeton's Town) at the mouth of Catawissa Creek in Columbia County. In 1750 they settled for a time near Tioga at "Tutelow Town"—from which comes the name of Tutelow Creek and of a suburb of Sayre formerly known as "Toodleytown." By 1771 they were established near the south end of Cayuga Lake.

Their formal adoption as "Younger Brothers," together with the Nanticokes, in 1753 at Onondaga was thought by Conrad Weiser to be a publicity stunt engineered by William Johnson of New York to

⁷ The Bethlehem Diary, Archives of the Moravian Church.

increase the importance of the Six Nations; but the subsequent history of these "Props to the Longhouse" makes it clear that the adoption was genuine. The Cayugas, their political sponsors, promised the Tutelos freedom of religion and the preservation of their native customs. So well have they kept their word that today the Cayugas conduct an annual Tutelo Spirit Adoption Ceremony on the Six Nations Reserve in Canada, although there are no longer any Tutelo-speaking people left to fully understand its meaning.

The political agenda of the Iroquois [writes Dr. Frank Speck] tolerated, even fostered, the retention of tribal institutions among those minority bodies of natives who voluntarily came to ally themselves with the Long House, notwithstanding the circumstances that they be of alien speech-stock and extraction. The Tutelo were evidently of a temper to enjoy this form of institutional freedom with the added dignity of social and political equality accorded them.⁸

There were other refugee groups, most of them small, detached fragments of important tribes outside our area. Among these were Mahicans from the east who merged with the Delawares at Wyoming and on the Allegheny, a few Foxes who settled on the Upper Allegheny and became absorbed by the Senecas, and a hundred or so Wyandot warriors under Chief Nicolas who in 1747-1748 settled with their families at Kuskusky but returned eventually to the Sandusky region of Ohio. These and many other such bands have passed through Pennsylvania, leaving behind them here and there a few burials and perhaps a vague tradition among local white people that "there used to be Indians around here."

More important were the large Shawnee bands who for a generation or two made their home in Pennsylvania. These will be considered in the next chapter.

⁸ *The Tutelo Spirit Adoption Ceremony* (Harrisburg, 1942), 2.



The Shawnees

ORIGIN

THE SHAWNEES were among the refugee groups in Pennsylvania, but their influence on our history has been so much greater than that of the Conoys, Nanticokes, Tutelos, and even the Tuscaroras, that it seems best to give them a chapter to themselves. They were not here long, and there were never very many of them; under these circumstances, the fact that their names have been preserved in so many different places throughout the Commonwealth is evidence of the lively impression they made upon our forefathers.

The same evidence from place names attests to the difficulty they had in settling down. When in 1694 they made their first appearance here in any great numbers, they were already known as a race of wanderers. Their movements while in this province—on the Delaware, the Susquehanna, the Allegheny, and the Ohio—confirmed that reputation. They left Pennsylvania about the time of the French and Indian War, and their subsequent history until the death of their great chief Tecumseh (the "Meteor" or "Flying Panther") in 1813 left the im-

pression of a mettlesome people, ready to stand up for their rights (they led in the Indian defense against white encroachments in the Northwest Territory), defiant of restraint, contemptuous of white people, and (from the latter's point of view) utterly untamable.

Yet the Shawnees were not by nature drifters. The seminomadic character in which they appear in our records was forced on them by circumstances. They were manly, responsible folk and village-dwellers. The Marquis de Beauharnois spoke of them in 1728 as "a very industrious people, cultivating a good deal of land."¹ But they were unfortunate in their international contacts, and at the same time quite unsubmitive to their fate. They accepted disaster without whining, and kept moving on "for fresh luck."

Like the Delawares, they were members of the great Algonkian family, branches of which were found all the way from Labrador to the Rocky Mountains and from Hudson Bay to North Carolina. Their speech was most closely related to that of the Sacs and Foxes. Like other Algonkian tribes they called the Delawares "Grandfathers." A long time ago they had a settled homeland, but wars—Indian wars, especially with the Cherokees, Catawbias, and Iroquois—caused them to break up and scatter.

Where their national home had been before their dispersion is a matter for debate into which we need not enter here. It is enough to say that it was probably in the Ohio Valley. Thomas Wildcat Alford, great-grandson of Tecumseh, said that the former home of his people was in what is now the state of Kentucky. From their homeland they moved east, south, west, and north; and, as the pressure upon them was unrelenting, they continued moving until some of them almost lost the habit of settled living.

According to their "ancient traditional history," as Alford tells us, there were five tribal divisions among them: *The-we-gi-la* (Sewickley), *Cha-lah-gaw-tha* (Chillicothe), *Pec-ku-we* (Pequea), *Kis-po-go*, and *May-ko-jay*. Each of these was virtually autonomous. Yet a measure of political unity is evidenced by the acknowledged leadership of certain divisions. According to Alford, the Sewickley and Chillicothe were "the principal or national clans from either of which comes the ruler of the nation who is called principal chief. . . ."²

As a result of the rivalry between the Sewickley and the Chillicothe, the other divisions were constrained to take sides, the Pequea and Kispogo allying themselves with the Sewickley and the Maykojay with the Chillicothe. Shawnee villages were commonly named after the

¹ Quoted by Charles A. Hanna, *The Wilderness Trail*, 2 vols. (New York, 1911), I, 184.

² Florence Drake, *Civilization*, 200.

division to which most of the inhabitants belonged. Thus we find the name Pequea in many forms applied to streams and towns in eastern Pennsylvania, while Sewickley is common in western Pennsylvania.

CHARACTER AND CUSTOMS

Before we examine the Shawnees' dramatic appearances and disappearances in and from Pennsylvania, let us look for a moment at the way they lived in their own communities. To begin with, we must realize that their patriotism was conspicuous even among Indians, who are all fervent nationalists. The Shawnees' gasconading helped to preserve their national morale during several centuries of being pushed around. They never lost their arrogance nor their flamboyance. It was fortunate, too, that they seldom lost their humor. When all three of these qualities came together, they made an interesting mixture. The story of the Creation as told by one of their chiefs at Fort Wayne in 1803 will serve as an example.

The Master of Life, . . . who was himself an Indian, made the Shawanoes before any other of the human race; and they sprang from his brain: he gave them all the knowledge he himself possessed, and placed them upon the great island, and all the other red people are descended from the Shawanoes. After he had made the Shawanoes, he made the French and English out of his breast, the Dutch out of his feet, and the long-knives [Americans] out of his hands. All these inferior races of men he made white and placed them beyond the stinking lake [Atlantic Ocean].³

If their contempt for foreigners was too outspoken, they made up for it by the consideration they showed for their own people. Young men, Alford tells us, made it a rule when they hunted together that each should give to his companion the first game he shot. Their elders preserved a dignity and courtesy in all their dealings. Although, as Alford says, they had not heard of the Golden Rule, they taught their children never to injure a neighbor, for, they said, "It is not him that you injure, you injure yourself."

For their government they had village chiefs (civil chiefs) and war chiefs.

. . . The office of the latter [said Tenskwatawa, the Shawnee Prophet, brother of Tecumseh] is considered more important & more honorable than the other & is received as the reward of great talents, exertion & bravery. To become an accepted War Chief it is necessary that a man should have led at least 4 war parties into the enemies country successively, that he should

³ Benjamin Drake, *Tecumseh* (Cincinnati, 1856), 21.

at each time take one or more scalps & that he should return his followers unhurt to their villages. If he accomplishes all this he may demand his appointment as a right, and the feast is accordingly prepared as in other cases of the kind, where the news of his acceptance is promulgated by the other chiefs and old men.

.....
There are female chiefs also appointed, as well for war as for peace. These are always the mothers or otherwise nearly related to the principal chiefs whose party they belong to. Their duties are not numerous nor arduous. The principal employment of the *peace woman* is by her entreaties & remonstrances to prevent the unnecessary effusion of blood; and if a War chief is bent upon prosecuting some undertaking not countenanced by the nation, the council chiefs apply to the peace woman, who goes to the War chief, and setting before him the care and anxiety & pain which the women experience in their birth & education she appeals to his better feelings and implores him to spare the innocent & unoffending against whom his hand is raised. She seldom fails to dissuade him, and in consequence of her general influence & success in such cases, is made a *dernier resort* by the village chiefs. Besides this duty these female chiefs have a general superintendence of the female affairs of the village; they order & direct the planting and the cooking & arrangement of feasts. But in the performance of the latter duty the war & peace women chiefs have separate establishments, at one of which the latter cooks the white corn & smaller vegetables & at the other the first superintends the preparation of the meats & coarser articles of food.

.....
There is no particular body of Counsellors or wise men, like the *Lupwaaeenoawuk* of the Delawares. But in important councils the aged men of the nation are invited . . . but these old men have no authority whatever, nor any influence, other than is common to their age & experience in the national affairs.

.....
The question of war is determined in a general council of War & peace chiefs, where, after the latter have in a few words expressed their general sentiments on the subject, the principal War Chief, who is of the Panther tribe, rises and declares the necessity of resorting to war for redress of their injuries, and then calls upon all of his own tribe to join him in raising the tomahawk. This done, is a signal of assent by all, to his proposition, the village chiefs surrender their power, the war chiefs immediately set about the preparations and the different tribes are invited to join the party. This is done by sending a tomahawk painted with red clay, through the different villages. . . .

The war dance always precedes their departure from the village and the leader declares to his followers the general order of march, the plan of attack, &c. . . .⁴

The Shawnees were famed fighters. It is a tradition, said the Shawnee Prophet, that "the Shawnees have never been in the habit of suing for peace themselves, but of receiving the propositions of their enemies." In war they were ruthless. There survived among them, as indeed among most other Indians until the eighteenth century, the practice of ritual cannibalism. The eating of human flesh was in general abhorred by Indians, but cannibalism survived as a war custom because it was believed that the virtues of a brave enemy could be transferred by this means to his captors.

The Shawnees had a curious way of determining the fate of war prisoners. It was described many years ago by the Shawnee Prophet to C. C. Trowbridge:

There existed formerly a Society among the Shawnees like that mentioned as having been known among the Miamies. This society was not formed by the Great Spirit but had its origin soon after the Indians began to wage war against each other. The members had their office by hereditary descent. The heads of the society were four women, but men also belonged to it. . . . These four old women, whenever they heard the "prisoners yell" of a returning war party painted their lips with red clay & sat out to meet the party. The peace women started from the village at the same time, and if they reached a prisoner in time to touch him before the others came up, the person was thenceforth safe and the Misseekwaaweekwaakee did not attempt to come near them. But if the latter or any one of them first touched a prisoner she immediately said to the warriors

Necauwaa
Ne neetsharnarkee
Kee peeaatarwee
Waasar
Hopeekomeetaa

Thank you
my children
you bring me
good
Broth,

and she led him off to camp. No exertions were sufficient to save a prisoner after being caught by one of these old women. His fate was irreversible. He was taken to the village & burned and afterwards cooked & eaten.⁵

A more brutal form of cannibalism was practiced by some Indians, though not by those we meet in Pennsylvania. These others cut off pieces of the prisoner's flesh while he was still alive, and roasted and

⁴ Vernon Kinietz and Erminie W. Voegelin (eds.), *Shawnee Traditions: C. C. Trowbridge's Account* (Ann Arbor, Michigan, 1939), 11-13, 17-18.

⁵ *Ibid.*, 53-54.

ate them before his face. John Heckewelder wrote in 1793, "I could not learn that the Dellawares, Wyondotts & Shawnese had adopted this horrid act: but with the Twichtwees (or Miamis) Potawattemes, Chippuwas & Massasagues it is now a days customary."⁶ Loskiel wrote: "The Delawares and Iroquois never do it. Formerly they have been known in the height of their fury to tear an enemy's heart out of his body, and devour it raw; but at present this is seldom or never practised."⁷

It was to the Chippewas and Ottawas that certain of the Iroquois, exasperated by the Moravians' pro-American activities during the Revolutionary War, offered the missionaries "to make broth of." We may hope the phrase was used in jest. Certainly, as it turned out, it was not the Chippewas and Ottawas but the Delawares and Wyandots who in the end took the Moravians prisoner and defended them from any serious harm.

Shawnee boys were physically hardened and taught to be self-reliant. When they had reached a safe age, they were trained to take a daily jump into the river—even in winter when they had to break the ice to get in. At the age of about ten, a boy underwent a test of endurance. He was sent into the woods with bow and arrows and told not to return until he had shot something to eat. Before he set out, his face was blackened with charcoal, a sign to all whom he met that he was on his test and was not to be helped. Little Wildcat Alford, when undergoing this ordeal, was two days alone in the woods without food. He became too weak to shoot straight; but he managed somehow to kill a quail and returned to his family, a man.

A favorite children's game, designed to develop skill in shooting at a moving object, was played with bows and arrows and a hoop. The hoop was made of a piece of wild grapevine, the ends of which were bent until they met and were then tied together. The middle of the hoop was closed tight with woven strips of bark. When the players took sides, one boy rolled the hoop, while those of the opposing side shot at it. The boy whose arrow pierced the hoop was the winner. Then those on the other side stuck their arrows into the ground just enough to make them stand up, and the winner tossed the hoop horizontally at them. Those he knocked down were his "for keeps."

Thomas Wildcat Alford's description of how the Shawnees lived when they moved to the Indian Territory (Oklahoma) in 1868 was in most particulars true of their way of living in earlier times.

⁶ Wallace (ed.), *Thirty Thousand Miles with John Heckewelder*, 318.

⁷ *History of the Mission*, I, 153.

It must be remembered that moving was a simple matter for our people in those days, though often it was a prolonged journey. Sometimes we camped in a locality for weeks or even months, waiting for floods to subside, or for one reason or another that suited the fancy of our leaders. Sometimes a crop of corn was planted and harvested before a journey was resumed. There was no cause for hurry; no business waited for our attention; no appointments had to be kept. Our homes, *we-gi-was* or cabins, could be built in a few days, and often were abandoned with little concern. We had little in the way of household effects: few clothes, a few buffalo robes, blankets, a few cooking vessels, and the crude and limited supply of utensils and implements used in carrying on the work about the camp. There were few wagons. The family effects generally were tied in bundles and strapped on the backs of horses—some were carried by the women. There was conversation and often merriment, as the groups tramped along through woods or prairie, over mountains or hills and boggy swamps. Streams were forded and when too deep or swift to wade, rafts were made to ferry across.⁸

In former days the Shawnees, like other Indians, were wise in woodcraft. Though they commonly traveled by well-trodden paths, they were not dependent on these. "Their course in unknown country," observed the Prophet, "is regulated by the sun and moon, or in cloudy weather by the moss on the trees, which is always found in greatest quantity upon the north side."

They had no newspapers, but the forest itself was full of local gossip for sharp eyes to read. Members of war parties or hunting parties, when they camped at night, often peeled strips of bark from the trees, and on the smooth surface thus exposed recorded their adventures in pictographs drawn with charcoal, vermilion, or other pigment. Some trails were bordered with many painted trees. A section of the Towanda Path was at one time known as "the Painted Line" because of the many peeled and painted trees along its course. Any Indian, no matter what his tribe or language, could understand these pictures. It might be said truly of Indian travelers, "He who runs may read." He could learn about the last war party that had passed: who the leader was (identifiable by his totem), the number of men in his party, what enemy scalps or prisoners they had taken, what losses they had sustained in killed, captured, and wounded.

All Indians were trained to be observant.

They can easily tell [said the Shawnee Prophet] by examining an encampment what nation of Indians the party were of who occupied it. For instance in a Shauwanoa encampment the

⁸ Florence Drake, *Civilization*, 14-15.

kettle is suspended from a horizontal beam which rests upon two forked sticks placed in the ground vertically at the opposite ends of the beam. The Ottawas spread their kettle from a single stick which is placed in the earth & extends across the fire. The Wyandots also use the beam, but they always encamp between two trees, against which they lean two poles which support the beam. The Chippeways use *two* sticks, which are run into the ground & crossed at the opposite ends.⁹

MIGRATIONS

The movements of the Shawnees, even in historic times, were so complicated and so little observed by white men that they are now difficult to follow in any detail. For a good general summary of their early migrations, we turn to Charles A. Hanna in *The Wilderness Trail*:

Between 1665 and 1685 they appear to have made their way up the Tennessee, the Cumberland, and the Kentucky, across the mountains, into Tennessee and Carolina. They likewise went into the country of the Miamis and the Illinois near the southern shore of Lake Michigan. From these places, between 1690 and 1710, most of them . . . were driven from the west and south into eastern Pennsylvania by the wars waged against them by the Miamis, by the Iroquois, and by the Catawbias, Chickasaws, Cherokees, and other southern tribes in Tennessee and the Carolinas.¹⁰

In the late seventeenth century two separate movements brought large bands of the Shawnees into Pennsylvania. One body came out of the west from the country of the Illinois on invitation from the Munsees. An advance party of a hundred Shawnees appeared on the upper Delaware River in 1692. With permission from the province of Pennsylvania and also from the Iroquois Confederacy, many Shawnees settled in 1694 on the Minisink lands of the upper Delaware at a place they named Pechoquealin, east of present Stroudsburg. Their sojourn in that neighborhood may be recognized today by geographical names above the Delaware Water Gap—Shawnee Island, Shawnee Run, Shawnee Lake—and by the post office Shawnee-on-the-Delaware. All these are opposite the New Jersey township of Paha-quarry, which is another spelling of Pechoquealin, “the place of the *Pec-ku-wes*.” In Monroe and Lancaster counties the prevalence of names derived from *Pec-ku-we* indicates the Pequea origin of most of these Shawnees.

⁹ Kinitz and Voegelin (eds.), *Shawnee Traditions*, 48.

¹⁰ I, 124.

About 1697 another body moved up from Cecil County in Maryland, at the head of Chesapeake Bay, and, with permission from the Susquehannocks then residing at Conestoga (near Lancaster) as well as from the Iroquois, they settled at the mouth of Pequea Creek. From there they spread out over the countryside. One of their villages is believed to have been at the "Shawnee Garden" on the southeastern edge of what is now the town of Gap in Lancaster County. Here in 1701 William Penn is said to have visited King Opossah and seen a Shawnee dance. Another Shawnee village was at present Steelville on Octoraro Creek. Governor John Evans visited the Shawnee at Pequea in 1707. A "Sawannah" Town is shown on a survey of 1722¹¹ on the east bank of the Susquehanna at what is now Columbia. Here Martin Chartier, a French trader who married a Shawnee wife, had a trading post.

Some of these Lancaster County Shawnees moved away in 1701, one party going up to the Wyoming Valley, where they settled on what has since been known as the Shawnee Flats. Another party went to a site on the Delaware, south of present Easton. Some years later a third band of Lancaster County Shawnees moved up the Susquehanna to Paxtang (Peixtang, Pechstank, possibly meaning the "Place of the Pequeas"). Those who settled on the Shawnee Flats (at modern Plymouth and nearly opposite Wilkes-Barre) were joined about 1728 by Shawnees from Pechoquealin under Kakowatchiky, who thereafter was chief of all the Wyoming Valley Shawnees.

Kakowatchiky was one of the most colorful figures in colonial Pennsylvania. For many years—certainly since before 1709—he had been chief of the Shawnees on the Delaware. It is thought by some that it was he who led the migration in 1694 from the Illinois country. To the end of his life he maintained a loyal—but by no means submissive—attachment to the Iroquois and to Pennsylvania. In 1728, when eleven of his warriors near Durham iron furnace got into a shooting affray with white men (who did not subscribe to the rule of Indian etiquette requiring neutrals to provide passing warriors with food on request), Kakowatchiky sent a polite but firm note to the governor of Pennsylvania. He regretted the fracas, blamed the white men for having provoked it, and requested the return of a gun which one of his warriors, wounded, had dropped on the field of battle. It should be added that it was about this time that the Iroquois sent Shickellamy to Shamokin (Sunbury) to supervise Pennsylvania's Indians and see that they came to—and did—no harm.

It was in the Wyoming Valley in 1742 that Kakowatchiky had his memorable conversation with Count Zinzendorf, founder of the re-

¹¹ BB-3, p. 1, Bureau of Land Records, Harrisburg.

newed Moravian church. As a simple statement of the Indian's attitude toward the best that European culture had to offer, Kakowatchiky's words (recorded afterwards by Conrad Weiser, who was present) are hardly to be equaled.

The old chief thanked the Count "in the most courteous manner" for proposing his conversion to the Christian faith. He said that he, too, believed in God, who had created both the Indian and the white man. But he went on to explain why, after what he had seen of white men on the frontier, he preferred Indian ways and beliefs; for, he said, the white man prayed with words while the Indian prayed in his heart.

He himself was an Indian of God's creation and he was satisfied with his condition had no wish to be a European, above all he was a subject of the Iroquois, it did not behoove him to take up new Things without their Advice or Example. If the Iroquois chose to become Europeans, and learned to pray like them: he would have nothing to say against it. . . . He liked the Indian Way of Life. God had been very kind to him even in his old Age and would continue to look well after him. God was better pleased with the Indians, than with the Europeans. It was wonderful how much he helped them.¹²

A further move by Kakowatchiky in 1744 took him and most of his band to Logstown (Ambridge) on the Ohio, eighteen miles down the river from what is now Pittsburgh. There Conrad Weiser visited him in 1748, and it was from that post a year later that Kakowatchiky drove Céloron de Blainville and his party. The old chief was then blind and bedridden; but, when Céloron professed to take the surrounding country in the name of the French king, "Shoot him," said Kakowatchiky, and Céloron made for his canoe. There is a further brief but friendly mention of Kakowatchiky on the eve of the French and Indian War, and then he disappears from view.

Not all the Shawnees in the Wyoming Valley followed Kakowatchiky to the west. A few remained at the Shawnee Flats under the leadership of Paxinosa, another friend of the Iroquois and the English. The French and Indian War making neutrality dangerous in that area, Paxinosa in 1756 moved his band closer to the Six Nations, who approved his attitude. He and his people settled for a time at Tioga (Athens) among some Mahican refugees. Thence in 1760 he moved west with his family to the Ohio where he had been born, while others of his people moved east to Otseningo (Chenango, near Binghamton) at the southern gateway to the Iroquois country.

¹² Wallace, *Conrad Weiser*, 144.

Meanwhile the last remaining Shawnee bands in Lancaster County had moved away. In 1722 Chief Opessah led some of those at Pequea back to Maryland. They settled at Opessah's Town—later known, after its abandonment by the Indians, as Opessah's Old Town and now more briefly as Oldtown, Maryland.

Before 1727 other Shawnees from Pequea and Paxtang had made a scattered settlement, Conodoguinet, on the west side of the Susquehanna at what are now New Cumberland and Lemoyne. Their stay there was not long; they soon moved on to the Allegheny. The grant to them in 1732 of a tract of 7,507 acres on what is now known as Harrisburg's West Shore, bounded north and south by two creeks, Shawnee (Yellow Breeches) and Conodoguinet, was an attempt to entice the Shawnees back from the Ohio country, where the French were making successful efforts to attach them to their interest. Pennsylvania's gesture came to nothing. The Shawnees preferred the independence which the west country gave them. In 1762 they formally released these Conodoguinet lands to the proprietors.

The Shawnee movement into western Pennsylvania was from several different directions and took a good many years to complete. For a time there were Shawnees on the West Branch of the Susquehanna at Chillisquaque, about five miles above Northumberland. There was another Shawnee town farther up the West Branch opposite the Great Island (Lock Haven). That was where Thomas McKee in 1743 nearly lost his life because the Shawnees there wanted immediate revenge for the recent killing by white men of some Iroquois warriors in Virginia. Other Shawnee towns were found on the Juniata and Conemaugh rivers. The various routes taken by Shawnees migrating from eastern Pennsylvania and North Carolina are indicated on old maps by the names of Shawnee towns: Opessah's Town on the Potomac, Ohesson or Kishacoquilla's Town (Lewistown) on the Juniata, Shawnee Cabins between Bedford and Schellsburg, Kickenapaulin's Town on the Conemaugh River at the mouth of Loyalhanna Creek. There were Shawnees settled at Conemaugh (Johnstown). Numbers of *The-we-gi-la* Shawnees settled at Sewickley (Springdale) on the Allegheny some time before 1734. Another Sewickley appeared later on the Youghiogheny River at the mouth of Sewickley Creek.

To the Allegheny River, a few miles above Sewickley (Springdale) came Peter Chartier, son of Martin Chartier and his Shawnee wife, with a body of Shawnees from the east. His settlement, on the site of Tarentum, became known as Chartier's Town. It seems to have been the principal settlement of the Shawnees from about 1734 to 1745. For a time Pennsylvania's Indian trade centered there. Randolph

C. Downes, in *Council Fires on the Upper Ohio*, calls it "the capital of Allegania."

It was from Allegania that five Shawnee chiefs sent a letter to Governor Patrick Gordon and the Council, dated May 1, 1734, which ranks as one of Pennsylvania's earliest temperance manifestoes. After complaining about the malpractices of six "pernicious" traders and commending four others, they said:

Likewise, we beg at our Council, that no Trader above mentioned may be allowed to bring more than thirty gallons of rum, twice in a year, and no more; for by that means, we shall be capable of paying our debts and making our creditors easy; which we cannot do otherwise. . . .

And for our parts, if we see any other Traders than those we desire amongst us, we will stave their cags, and seize their goods, likewise.¹³

In 1744 Peter Chartier's Shawnees, now deeply under French influence, robbed James Dunning and Peter Tostee, Pennsylvania traders. Next year Chartier moved his band, some three or four hundred strong, to the Scioto, leaving Chartier's Old Town as a landmark on the Traders Path to the Forks of the Ohio. Some of his Shawnees later returned to Pennsylvania and settled at Logstown, where in due course the Six Nations appointed Scaroyady to look after them. The French and Indian War broke up the community and caused this last band of Shawnees to move out of western Pennsylvania.

¹³ Hanna, *Wilderness Trail*, I, 309-10.



Indian Land Cessions and Delaware Migrations

LAND CESSIONS

IF THE DELAWARES, as we look back on their history, appear a restless, migratory people, we must remember that it was the white man who made them so. He acquired their lands—quietly in Pennsylvania but as inexorably as in any other colony—and pushed the Indians out. The Delawares and their Uncles the Six Nations were powerless to arrest the process. At the outset it was in large part the Delawares' instinctive hospitality that led them to surrender their lands to strangers who wanted them. Ignorant of the white man's real estate customs, village chiefs affixed their totem marks to deeds conveying more rights than they were aware of. By the time the Indians had come to an understanding of what the white man's purchases involved, new pressures influenced them to continue selling. For one thing, white men swarming across the purchase bounds made it ap-

parent to the Indians that the sale of their lands and the removal of their people was the only alternative to perpetual provocation and the risk of war.

In Pennsylvania the white man acquired Indian land not by conquest but by purchase. Indian title was recognized by the Dutch and Swedes. It was not recognized by the English (the Indians being "heathen"); but William Penn, though he accepted English title to his province, nevertheless respected the Indian right of domain and extinguished it only by purchase.

There is no certain evidence (despite claims by the Dutch) of Indian land purchases in Pennsylvania before Peter Minuit in 1638 landed Swedish colonists near the mouth of Minquas Creek and purchased land on the west shore of the Delaware as far north as the Falls (present Trenton). Thus, as George Smith writes in the *History of Delaware County, Pennsylvania*, "to the wise policy of the Swedes we are really indebted for the extinguishment of the Indian title to our lands,—a policy . . . subsequently adopted by William Penn on the score of strict justice to the natives."¹

It was, however, the expansion of English rather than Dutch or Swedish settlements that forced the Delawares out of Pennsylvania. The Dutch, the Swedes, and, we should add, the Finns (Finland at that time being a part of Sweden) had done little to disturb Indian occupancy in the Delaware Valley. The Dutch were chiefly interested in trade; the Swedes and Finns, although most of them were settlers, were too few in numbers to exert much pressure on the original inhabitants. But the situation changed when William Penn arrived. It was his purpose to "plant a country." To do this he encouraged the immigration of British and other European farmers and merchants, offering them land on easy terms and promising them religious and political freedom. He and his agents purchased large blocks of land from the Indians. Settlements were thrown out in a widening arc from Philadelphia.

In the face of this colonial expansion, the Delawares began a movement of withdrawal. In one instance the Proprietor made himself responsible for their resettlement. He moved some bands from lower Ridley and Crum creeks to a small reservation he had set aside for them in 1701 at Okehocking, between Newtown Square and West Chester and about seventeen miles west of Philadelphia. This was the only reservation the Proprietor ever established for the Indians whose lands he bought. Thereafter they shifted for themselves, moving in small bands to the Brandywine, the Schuylkill, and the Susquehanna

¹ (Philadelphia, 1862), 24-25.

as their lands passed out of their possession. After the middle of the century, these movements acquired momentum. The Delaware nation split up and sought refuge in two different directions. The bulk of the people moved west to what was known as "the Ohio country" (which included western Pennsylvania), hoping to find there a permanent land base where they might preserve their native culture. Others moved north to take shelter in the Iroquois Longhouse.

The drive against "colonialism" in the world at large today is at base a revolt against the principle on which European powers from Columbus' day on have based their title to lands: namely, that discovery of a country or a continent gave title therein to the government under whose auspices the discovery had been made. Thus England's claim to the lands on which her colonies were established was based on the discovery of North America in 1497 by John Cabot, an Italian navigator in the service of King Henry VII of England. That was as true of Pennsylvania, which Cabot had never seen, as it was of New England and Canada.

The Indian attitude to such claims was well expressed by Cornplanter in 1794. Speaking of the Fort Stanwix Treaty (1784) between the United States and the Iroquois Confederacy at the close of the Revolutionary War, he said, as recorded by John Adlum:

The Commissioner, after reciting various things, wound up his speech; by informing them [the Indians] that the *great King* over the great water, had given up all the Country possessed by the *Indians*, to the thirteen fires [the United States] . . . and that the lands were no longer ours. I, (*the Cornplanter*) informed the Commissioners of the 13 fires—That the *Great spirit above* had planted our Ancestors on this ground, and that those now living of the indians grew up out of it, and that it belonged to them; that if the *King* had given the Country away (which was a thing they could not comprehend) he had given that which did not belong to him, and that he must have stolen the right of the *Country* from them²

Penn tried to reconcile his legal rights with the principles of equity by interpreting English title as giving him a pre-emptive right to buy these lands from the Indians, and he proceeded to extinguish Indian rights by fair purchase. This solution of the problem was early hinted at in a letter he addressed to the Indians, October 18, 1681, and sent to them in advance of his own arrival in America. In it he recognized a higher right than could be found in the terms of any legal document and set the tone of subsequent negotiations.

² *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography*, LXXXIV (1960), 313-14.

MY FRIENDS:

There is one great God and power that . . . hath written His law in our hearts, by which we are taught and commanded to love and help, and do good to one another, and not to do harm and mischief one unto another. Now this great God hath been pleased to make me concerned in your parts of the world, and the King of the country where I live hath given unto me a great province therein; but I desire to enjoy it with your love and consent, that we may always live together as neighbors and friends. . . .⁸

Penn recognized the problem: how to build a European-style state in Pennsylvania without violating the natural rights of its original inhabitants. The King's charter gave him a title to be invoked against all rival claimants of the white race, whether Frenchmen, New Englanders, Marylanders, or Virginians. At the same time he hoped that his own sense of fair play would suffice to keep the friendly support of the Indians in his Holy Experiment. It was an honorable solution, and it was carried out in such a way that to this day the Indians revere his memory.

Penn's acute mind seems to have penetrated to the underlying causes of land controversies between the Indians and the white men, who had different conceptions of land ownership, title, and possession. Among the Delawares in particular, the local community, represented by its sachems or "kings," owned the land. Sale of land had to be authorized by the community chiefs, with the concurrence of the chiefs of neighboring communities; for there was a possibility of overlapping jurisdiction, the bounds of Indian tracts often being defined vaguely by hills and streams or by the distance a man walks in a day or a day and a half.

William Penn saw clearly the danger of conflicting claims arising from such ill-defined boundaries. He saw also the danger of future conflict if he failed now to get all the right signatures. Land titles were often challenged by the Indians on the grounds that some tribe or clan or lineage had not been properly represented at the "treaty" in which the sale had been made. Penn's first consideration, therefore, in these purchases was to satisfy all possible claimants. He was more intent on that than on establishing exact boundaries for each tract.

We find, in consequence, a good deal of overlapping. The most conspicuous example is that of the Susquehanna lands. In 1696 he purchased them from Governor Thomas Dongan of New York (who had misconstrued the Five Nations grant of these lands to New York *in trust*—for their own protection—as an outright sale). In 1700 Penn purchased them once more from the Susquehannocks (now residing

⁸ Catherine Owens Peare, *William Penn: A Biography* (Philadelphia, 1957), 223.

[illegible]

at Conestoga by sanction of the Iroquois), who had formerly owned them. In 1736 the proprietaries of Pennsylvania paid for them all over again, this time to the Iroquois who claimed title to them by right of their former conquest of the Susquehannocks.

In the earliest purchases, it is probable that the Delawares did not fully understand what they were selling, or rather what the English thought they were buying. The Delawares invited their white friends to share the land with them, and accepted "pay" as a kind of guest present. In later years, when they knew better, they sometimes played up old claims and, in the hope of getting a few goods and some liquor, frightened the white men into paying again for lands long since honestly purchased. The Iroquois expressly charged the Delawares with this. "You have drunk the land away," they said.

The Walking Purchase of 1737 was a device used to put a stop to such blackmail by the Indians. The intent was sound enough, for the white men had a real grievance. But the method employed was unfortunate, since it gave the Indians a greater grievance and handed the enemies of the province an effective propaganda weapon. The heirs of Penn in this case forgot his precept: "Be not provoked by Injuries to commit them."

EXTINGUISHMENT OF INDIAN TITLE

During William Penn's lifetime, laws were passed to prevent individual white men from taking advantage of the Indians in the matter of land purchase. The act of October 14, 1700, declared that if anyone presumed to buy land in Pennsylvania from the Indians without permission of the proprietary, the purchase was to be "void and of no effect." But by the middle of the eighteenth century the flood of immigration and the consequent pressure for lands beyond the Indian borders forced upon the government a grudging recognition of "squatters' rights."

The accompanying map, adapted (with a few corrections) from one prepared some years ago by the Bureau of Land Records at Harrisburg, shows in a general way the principal treaties, purchases, and agreements by which "the whole right of soil of the Indians within the charter bounds of Pennsylvania was extinguished."

It is impossible on a map of this scale to show the many changes and adjustments made in boundary lines during the more than a hundred years it took to complete the transfer of ownership. In the first purchases, which were made from the Delawares, there was constant overlapping and some tracts were paid for several times. To avoid the

confusion and continuing disputes caused by these petty transactions, small purchases from local Indians were later absorbed in larger ones negotiated with Indian councils of greater authority and more extended jurisdiction.

A frequent complaint from the Indians was that white men bought land from unauthorized persons. On these grounds Red Jacket and others challenged the validity of the purchases made in 1784 and 1789 (the Erie Triangle). Another complaint was that when the purchased lands came to be surveyed, the courses were different from what the Indians had been led to expect at the time of the original agreement. The Walking Purchase of 1737 is a case in point. So is the Albany Purchase of 1754. By this latter transaction the proprietors acquired, as they thought, the greater part of western Pennsylvania—everything west and southwest of a line running from the Susquehanna River below its forks (Sunbury) to the New York border north of Warren. In 1758, during the French and Indian War, Pennsylvania returned the greater part of these lands to the Iroquois in order to offset the complaint that too much land was being taken. The Indians had been led to believe that the purchase line did not cross the Susquehanna.

In the purchases of 1682, 1683, 1684, 1718, 1732, and 1737—all in the southeastern corner of Pennsylvania—the proprietors dealt with the Delawares, whose native home this was. But the greater part of Pennsylvania was purchased afterward from the Iroquois, who claimed this vast territory as part of their domain.

The first purchases were open and aboveboard. Penn and his agents asked for lands, and the Indians gave them as to friends, accepting small presents as acknowledgment of a favor. Later purchases were less simple. When settlers poured across treaty-made boundaries onto Indian lands, the government tried to make amends, not by removing the settlers (that was tried unsuccessfully in 1750 by a method commemorated in the name of the town of Burnt Cabins), but by the purchase of the invaded territories.

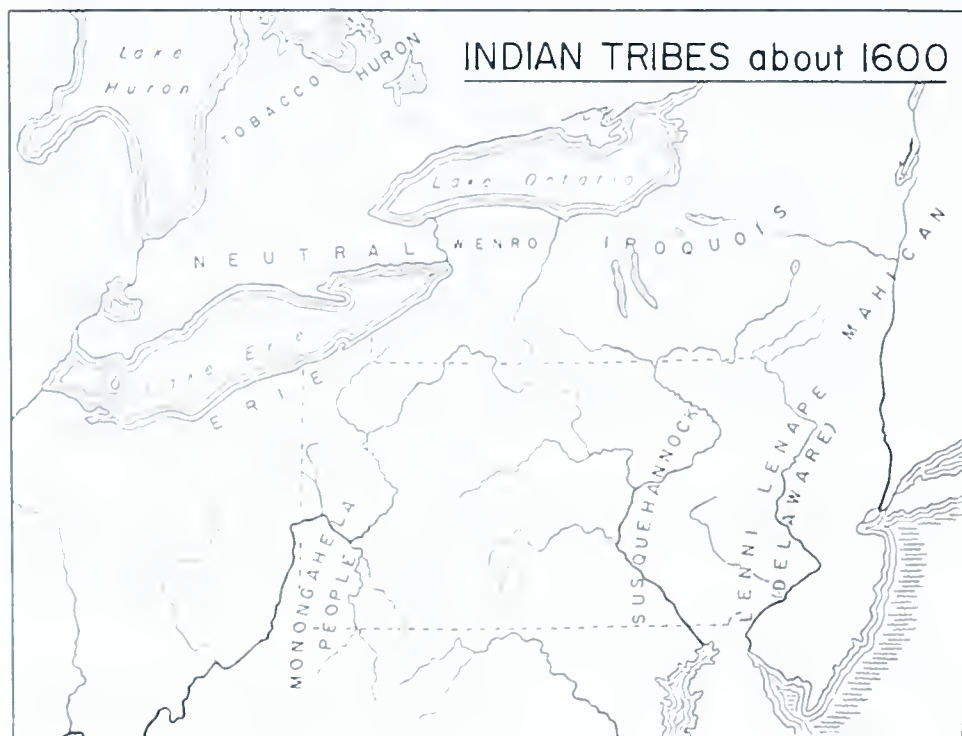
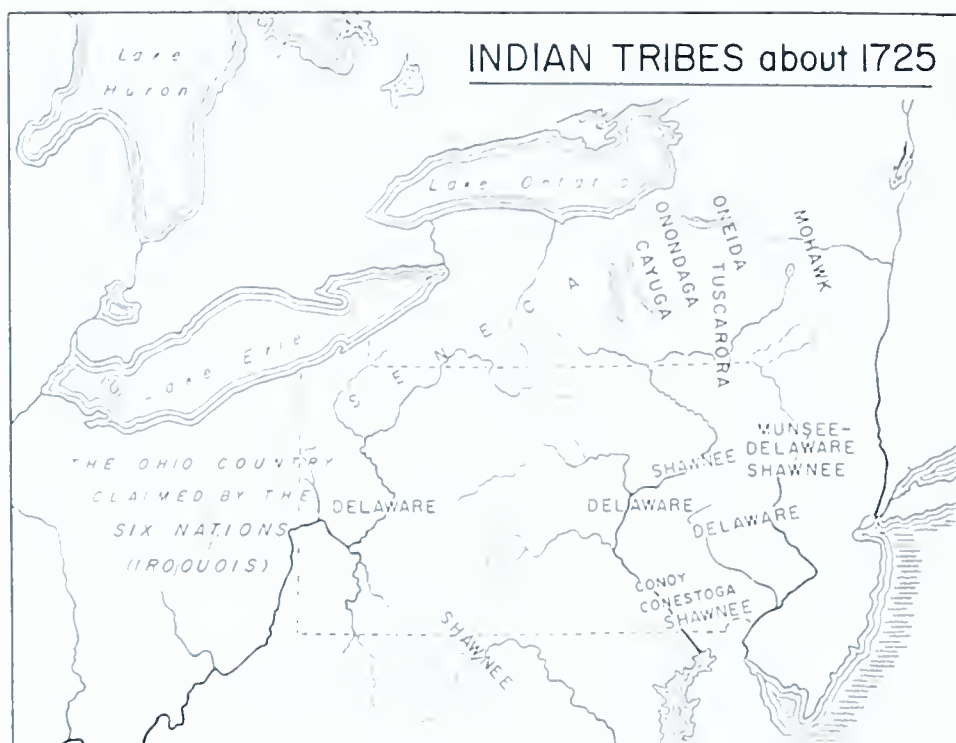
Interesting legal complications have resulted from the clash between Indian and European concepts of landownership. Further complications have arisen out of Indian rivalries and uncertainty concerning the political status of this or that tribe or band: whether, for instance, the Ohio Delawares were "Women," and if so in what exact sense; and whether the Ohio Iroquois (commonly known as Mingoes) were to be regarded as an independent people or as "Props to the Iroquois Longhouse."

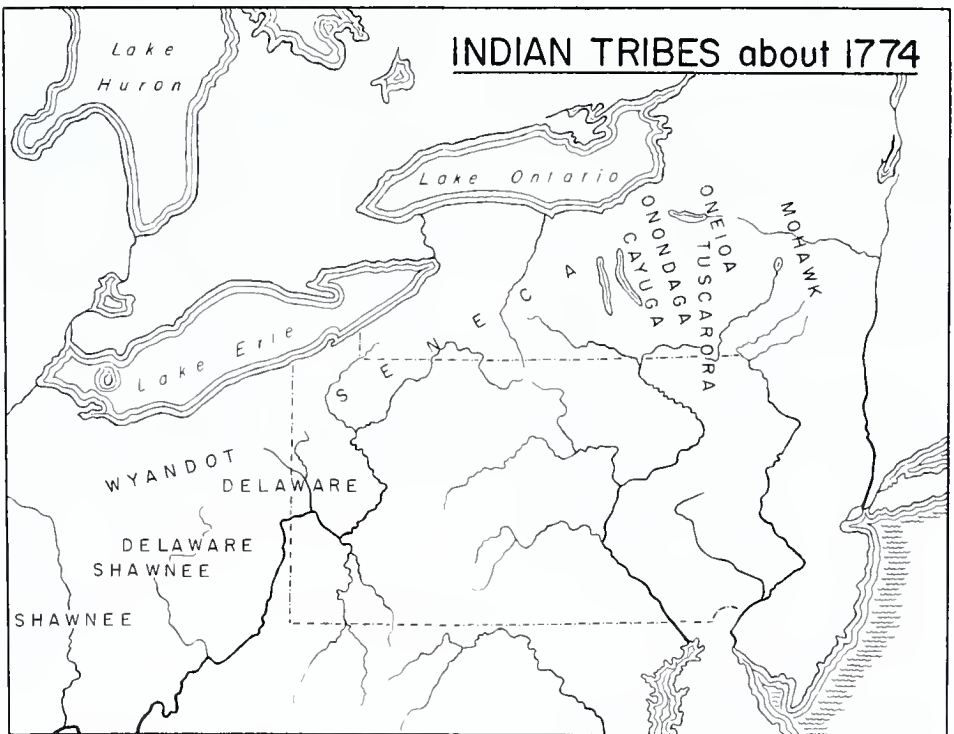
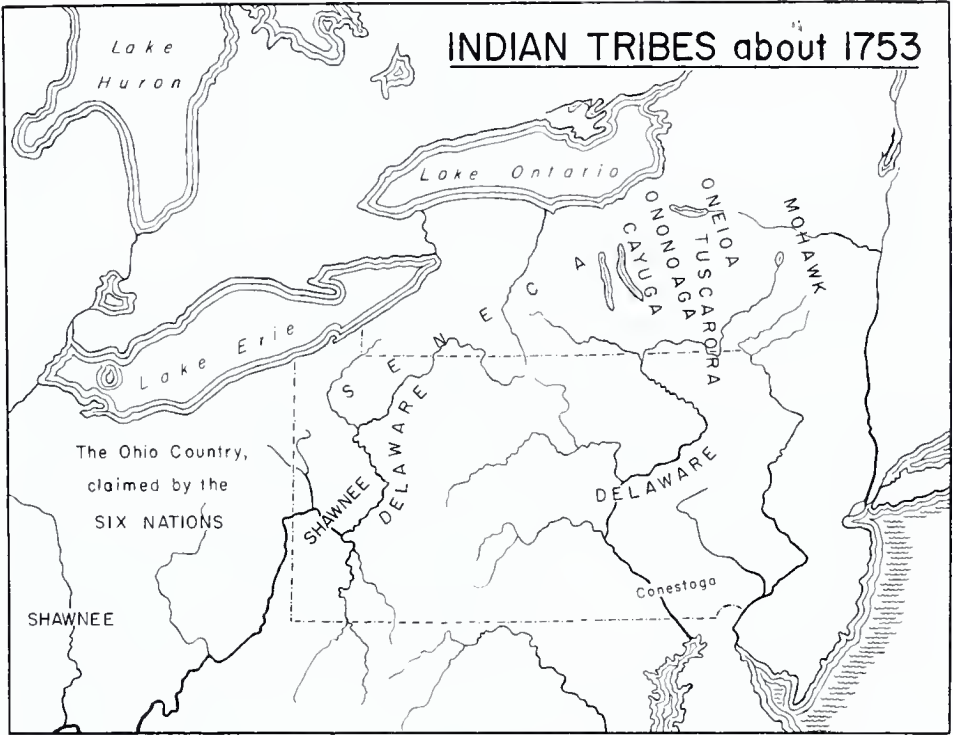
The following list of land transactions, printed originally on the Bureau of Land Records "Genealogical Map of the Counties," will show the piecemeal way in which Indian rights were extinguished. That the picturesque terms by which Indians defined the extent of their hunting territories ("to the setting of the sun," "as far back as a horse can travel in two summer days," and so forth) were more precise, as the Indians understood them, than some white men wished it to appear, is made plain by item No. 18, December 16, 1720.

1. 1682, July 15. Deed for lands between the Falls of Delaware and Neshammonys Creek, confirmed by William Penn, October 24, 1682.
2. 1683, June 23. Deed for "lands lying betwixt Pem-mapecka and Neshemineh Creek *** and backward of the same, and to run two days journey with an horse, up into the country as the said River doth go."
3. 1683, June 25. Wingebone's release for lands "lying on the west side of the Schuylkill, beginning from the first falls *** and backward of the same as far as my right goeth."
4. 1683, July 14. Deed for lands between Schuylkill and Chester Rivers.
5. 1683, July 14. Deed for lands between Schuylkill and Pemmapecka Creeks.
6. 1683, September 10. Keketappan's [Kekelappan's] deed "for his half of all his lands betwixt Susquehanna and Delaware which lieth on the Susquehanna side."
7. 1683, October 18. Machaloha's deed "for lands from the Delaware River and Chesapeake Bay, and up to the Falls of the Susquehanna."
8. 1684, June 3. Manghougsin's release "for all his land on Perkioming."
9. 1684, June 7. Richard Mettamicon's release "for lands on both sides Pemmapecka Creek on the Delaware."
10. 1685, July 30. Deed for lands "between Pemma-pecka and Chester Creeks, and back *** as far as a man can go in two days" from a point on Conshohocken Hill.

11. 1685, October 2. Deed for lands between Duck and Chester Creeks, and backward from Delaware, "as far as a man could ride in two days with a horse."
12. 1692, June 15. Acknowledgment of satisfaction for land "lying between Neshamina and Poquessing *** and extending backwards to the utmost bounds of the Province."
13. 1696, January 13. Col. Thomas Dongan's, formerly Governor of New York, deed to William Penn for lands on both sides of Susquehanna, from the lakes to the "Chesapeak Bay."
14. 1697, July 5. Taminy's deed for the lands between Penmopeck and Neshaminy, and "as far back as a horse can travel in two summer days."
15. 1700, September 13. Deed of the Susquehanna Indians for the lands on "both sides of the Susquehanna and next adjoining the same, and comprising Dongan's Deed." (No. 13).
16. 1701, April 23. Ratification of Dongan's Deed and the Deed of September 13, 1700 (No. 14), "by the Susquehanna, Shawona, Potowmack, and Conestogoe Indians."
17. 1718, September 17. Deed of release by the Delaware Indians for "the lands between the Delaware and Susquehanna Rivers, from Duck Creek *** to the Lehigh Hills."
18. 1720, December 16. Deed settling controversy respecting boundary of the lands arising from dispute concerning distance a man and a horse can each travel in a day.
19. 1726, May 31. Deed for lands on both sides of Brandywine Creek.
20. 1732, September 7. Deed for lands between "Lechay Hills and Kekachtanemin Hills," between Schuylkill and its branches, and the branches of Delaware.
21. 1736, October 11. Deed "for all the said River Susquehanna with the lands lying on both sides thereof," eastward to the

- head of the branches, or springs running into the Susquehanna, and westward "to the setting of the sun," and from its mouth northward "to the hills or mountains called Kekachtanemin."
22. 1736, October 25. The preceding deed declared by the Indians to include the lands on the Delaware, "and all the lands on both sides of the River Susquehanna from the mouth thereof as far northward, *** to the ridge of Hills called Tyoninhas[a]chta."
 23. 1737, August 25. Deed comprising the "Walking Purchase," or, "as far as a man can go in one day and an half" from the westerly branch of Neshamony to the Delaware.
 24. 1749, August 22. Deed for lands from the "Kekactany Hills to Maghoniow Mountain," and between Susquehanna and Delaware on the north side of "Lechawachsein Creek."
 25. 1754, July 6. Deed at Albany for the lands on the west side of Susquehanna River, from Kittochtinny Hills to a mile above the mouth of Penn's Creek, "thence northwest and by west, as far as the Province extends to its western line, *** thence to the southern boundary, *** thence by the southern boundary to the *** Kittochtinny Hills, *** thence by the south side of the said Hills to the Beginning."
 26. 1758, October 23. Deed of surrender of part of the Purchase of 1754, and new boundaries declared and confirmed.
 27. 1768, September 5. The end of "Nittany Mountain assumed as a station," per deed made, and surveys not usually made north thereof.
 28. 1768, November 5. Deed at Fort Stanwix, commonly called the "New Purchase," extending from northeast to southwest corner of Commonwealth.





29. 1784, October 23. Deed explaining the boundary at the treaty at Fort Stanwix and Pine Creek, declared to have been the boundary designated by the Indians, commonly called the "Last Purchase."
30. 1784, December 21. Deed declaring Lycoming to be the boundary.
31. 1785, January 21. Deed at Fort Stanwix and Fort McIntosh for the residue of the lands within the Commonwealth, made October 23, 1784, and January 21, 1785.
32. 1789, January 9. Indian cession of lands at Presque Isle including the Triangle.
33. 1792, March 3. On October 3, 1788, an Act was passed authorizing the Supreme Executive Council to draw on the State Treasurer for a sum of money for defraying the expense of purchasing from the Indians lands on Lake Erie. It is usually called the "Purchase of the Triangle." It contains 202,187 acres.

DELAWARE MIGRATIONS

When their lands were sold on the lower Delaware and Schuylkill rivers, Indian communities moved west to the Brandywine and farther west to the Susquehanna. In 1709 Chief Sassoonan (Olumapies) of the Unami Delawares was reported to be living with his people at Paxtang (Harrisburg), where the Allegheny Path forded the Susquehanna. About 1718 Sassoonan and the Paxtang Delawares moved up the river to Shamokin (Sunbury).

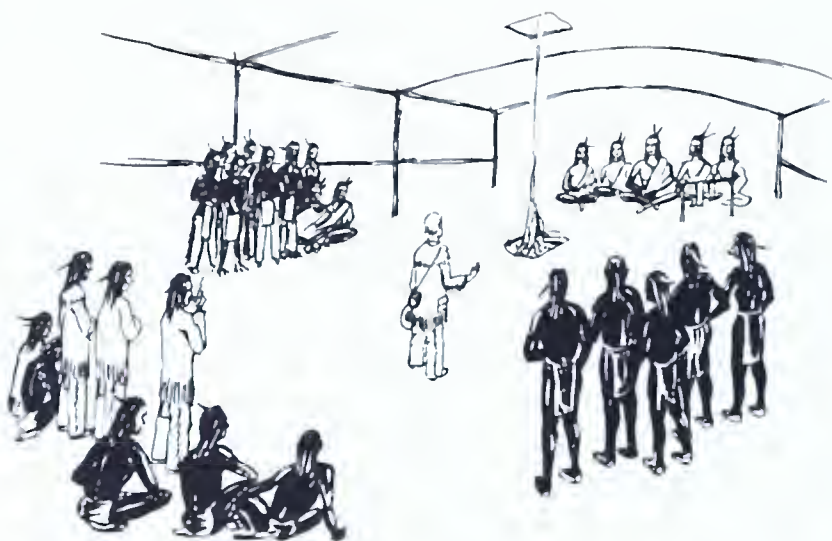
For a few years the North Branch and the West Branch of the Susquehanna, which came together at Shamokin, became the refuge of Lenape bands from various parts of the Delaware Basin. To Shamokin about 1728 the Iroquois sent Shickellamy to superintend these and other Indians—especially the Shawnees and Mahicans of that general vicinity—who were under their protection.

As early as 1724 some Delaware bands had moved west to the Allegheny River; but, until after the French and Indian War, the Susquehanna Valley continued to hold a large part of the Delaware people. Numbers of them, together with Shawnees and Mahicans, settled in the Wyoming Valley in the vicinity of modern Wilkes-Barre.

The movement to the Wyoming region was accelerated by the Walking Purchase of 1737. That was a transaction by which a small hunting territory, allegedly sold by some *Unami* Delawares near Wrightstown, was blown up by a dishonest survey to take in all the *Munsee* territory from the Delaware Water Gap to the mouth of Lackawaxen Creek. It was as if a man bought a farm in York County, Pennsylvania, and measured it to include the state of Maryland. The Iroquois, appealed to by the injured Indians, supported Penn's heirs on the grounds that the Munsees, as their Uncles thought, had disposed of those lands piecemeal by previous sales (like that to John Conrad Weiser in 1726). In 1742 the Iroquois, accordingly, ordered the Delawares—Munsees and Unamis alike—to move to the Wyoming Valley, which the Iroquois promised to hold in trust for them forever.

What happened afterwards in the Wyoming Valley was to leave a deep scar on Pennsylvania history, as will be seen in the chapter on Pennsylvania's Indian wars. After the so-called Albany Purchase of 1754 (when the Susquehannah Company of Connecticut acquired a disputed title to these lands) and the bloodshed of the French and Indian War, some of the Wyoming Delawares went west to the Ohio country, while others traveled north to the Iroquois homeland.

But these incidents—the Walking Purchase, the Connecticut Purchase, and the French and Indian War—were only the backwash of a noble and on the whole successful experiment both in democracy and in race relations. It has been suggested that the proper measure of human progress is not money and gadgets but man's increasing awareness of his responsibilities to his fellow men. If that be so, Pennsylvania may take pride in having led the march of human progress among the English colonies.



Pennsylvania's Indian Policy

WE MUST GO BACK a little in time in order to pick up the thread of this chapter, in which we follow the wise policy under which Pennsylvania conducted her Indian relations.

It should be remembered that the first contact between American Indians and white men brought wonder and delight to both parties. "They are a loving people," wrote Columbus, "without covetousness, and fit for anything. . . . They love their neighbors as themselves, and their speech is the sweetest and gentlest in the world."¹ According to Captain John Smith in 1608, the Susquehannocks took him and his white-skinned sailors for gods.

Both sides were soon disillusioned. Columbus himself started the vogue of kidnapping Indians. Reprisals produced counterreprisals, and the cycle of captivities and massacres continued for hundreds of years.

¹ Quoted in D'Arcy McNickle, *They Came Here First: The Epic of the American Indian* (Philadelphia, 1949), 121.

No one can blame the Indians for fighting to preserve their country. At the same time it is difficult to blame the settlers, caught up as they were in one of the great mass movements of mankind. That does not mean that we must condone the crimes committed by those who cheated and murdered to gain their ends. It means only that we should not be unfeeling toward either side as we look back on the clash of races, remembering that there was then no way of controlling the vast migration—much like an explosion—which Columbus' discovery of America had touched off.

Pennsylvania came nearest of all the English colonies to a just and sensible handling of the problem. Until the middle of the eighteenth century, relations here between Indians and Europeans were, on the whole, cordial. There were two reasons for this. In the first place, a tradition of fair and friendly dealing, introduced on the Delaware by the Dutch and Swedes, had been reinforced by William Penn. His policy, it is true, grew somewhat worn and ragged after his death as white settlements pushed westward ahead of purchase. But the Penn tradition was never wholly lost, even in the midst of war.

In the second place, Pennsylvania had a clear-cut and well-administered Indian policy, founded on the realities of Indian and European politics. It took into account the fact that the Iroquois were, in the Indian world, the dominant power and that France was Pennsylvania's potential enemy. At the same time, the policy had behind it a good Quaker motive, the pursuit of peace, especially in those spots where it was most vulnerable: at the Forks of the Delaware, for instance, and in the Ohio country.

Pennsylvania had need of a sound Indian policy. On her western border, two dangers confronted her. One was posed by the French, who did not recognize the western bounds of Pennsylvania as laid down in the Charter of 1681. France claimed those lands for herself by right of discovery, and was engaged in persuading Pennsylvania's former Indian friends, both Shawnees and Delawares, to help her keep them. The other danger was occasioned by Pennsylvania's frontiersmen, whose encroachments on Indian lands in the Juniata Valley and elsewhere threatened to set off a train of reprisals.

Despite these dangers on the frontier, Pennsylvania was committed by a Quaker-dominated Assembly to a policy of nonviolence, and was therefore unable to set up even a minimum system of military defense. She had to find other ways of protecting herself. In this emergency, James Logan came forward with a solution. He proposed to the Provincial Council that "a Treaty should be sett on foot with the

five Nations, who have an absolute Authority as well over the Shawanese as all our Indians. . . ."²

The course he proposed was adopted in 1731, and Pennsylvania took shelter under the Iroquois Tree of Peace, recognizing the Six Nations' claim to authority over all the Indians in the province and relying on the Confederacy to keep them quiet. As Thomas Penn, son of the first proprietor, expressed it some years later (1756) Pennsylvania's policy was "to strengthen the hands of the Six Nations, and enable them to be the better answerable for their Tributaries."³

Pennsylvania willingly accepted Six Nations neutrality in the Anglo-French struggle. One of the conditions of that neutrality, as has been noted, was that the French should not cross Iroquois territory to strike at the English. The neutral status of the Iroquois served as an immediate shield to the Susquehanna Valley; and in time the English came to believe that Iroquois authority in the Ohio country, which included the Allegheny and Monongahela river valleys, was as good a protection for them as a line of forts.

The formulation of Pennsylvania's Indian policy in 1731-1732 was the work of three men: James Logan, Provincial Secretary and one of the ablest students of Indian affairs the English colonies ever produced; Conrad Weiser, the erratic but brilliant "Province Interpreter," who had lived in his youth among the Mohawks; and Shickellamy, a Cayuga Indian who had been sent by the Six Nations to Shamokin to superintend their southern affairs.

It was, on the whole, a good policy. It strengthened the authority of the Six Nations and so helped them to keep the peace among their tributaries. It saved Pennsylvania from any serious Indian disturbances for more than twenty years, a crucial time in the development of the province. It brought her also many particular benefits. In 1732 the Six Nations approved (through Shickellamy) a Delaware sale of lands in the Lebanon Valley. Pennsylvania acquired from the Six Nations in 1736 a release of lands on both sides of the Susquehanna River south of the Blue Mountains. In the same year the Six Nations agreed to sell no lands within the chartered bounds of the province except to Pennsylvania's proprietors. In 1737 Pennsylvania intervened successfully at Virginia's request to stave off an Iroquois war with the Catawbas, which might have involved the Old Dominion. In 1742 Pennsylvania obtained from the Six Nations an adjudication in her favor of the Walking Purchase dispute—though whether this was of ultimate benefit to the province has remained for over two hundred

² Pennsylvania, *Colonial Records*, III, 429.

³ Wallace, *Conrad Weiser*, 44.

years a matter of controversy. The "Walk" ended the nuisance of Delaware blackmail at the Forks, but it provided a deadly propaganda weapon for anyone—Quaker, Frenchman, or Indian—who wanted to attack the proprietors and the province. Certainly, neither the Delawares nor the Shawnees who were compelled to cross the Poconos to Wyoming ever forgot the sting of their displacement. Teedyuscung in 1757, during the French and Indian War, said that while the Walk was "not the principal cause that made us Strike our Brethren, the English, yet it has caused the stroke to come harder than it otherwise would have come."⁴

Continuing our brief list of benefits received from the Iroquois alliance, we should remember that in 1743 Pennsylvania again used her good offices through Conrad Weiser at Onondaga to prevent a war between the Six Nations and Virginia. In 1744 Pennsylvania sponsored the Lancaster Treaty, at which the Six Nations released to Virginia lands "to the setting of the sun." Finally, when the French and Indian War came, although a few of the Senecas took part in it under French direction, the Six Nations as a whole restrained their Indian "nephews." At Easton in 1758 they made peace with Pennsylvania on behalf of the Delawares, and so helped to prepare the way for General Forbes' bloodless capture of Fort Duquesne.

Neither England nor France in America desired war with each other or with the Indians, but they drifted into it. To French and English alike, competing as they were for the Indian trade and also for military security, it was important to gain the support of the Indians in the Ohio-Allegheny region. The French wished to have friendly hunters around them to assure a steady supply of food for their garrisons and of furs for their traders. Montreal already had a near-monopoly of trade with the Indians north and west of the Great Lakes; but the French were anxious to stop a bad leak south of Lake Erie, where traders from Philadelphia with goods at better rates than the French could offer were getting the furs. The French wished to bring all Indians on Pennsylvania's western border under their control.

James Logan believed that one of the best ways of blocking French designs in the west was to develop Pennsylvania's fur trade. His own traders established posts on the Beaver River, in the Muskingum country, at Sandusky, and still farther west. When in 1744 the Shawnee leader Peter Chartier arrested some Pennsylvania traders and confiscated their goods (an obvious move in the trade war), the province was both angry and frightened. The proprietors of Pennsylvania were

⁴ Pennsylvania, *Colonial Records*, VII, 676.

fearful of what, if war came, Indian raids might do to the undefended back settlements which constituted the colony's breadbasket.

Out in the Ohio country (which we must remember included the Allegheny River basin, *Ohio* and *Allegheny* being respectively Seneca and Delaware words for one stream, the Great or Beautiful River) there were large bands of Indians, such as the Ottawas and Wyandots (Hurons), who had for more than a century been France's best commercial allies, middlemen in the trade with the great northwest. There were also among them a good many Six Nations Indians (Mingoes): hunters who had settled down with their families and made this western country their home, although the Onondaga Council still claimed authority over them.

There were also growing numbers of Delawares and Shawnees in the west, expatriates from their homelands in eastern Pennsylvania. The authorities in Philadelphia attempted by various means to bring them back out of the French sphere of influence. The Shawnees, as has been seen, were offered a reservation on what had once been their home on the west bank of the Susquehanna opposite Paxtang (Harrisburg). Pennsylvania urged the Six Nations to assert their authority and bring their "nephews"—Shawnees and Delawares—back where a British eye could be kept on them.

But the Delawares and Shawnees declined to come. They had their own interests to look after, and there was no lack of traders (it is estimated that there were about three hundred of them in the Ohio country) to supply them with blankets and ironware. French traders could not sell their goods as cheaply as the English did, but Frenchmen had greater courtesy (a quality the Indians warmly responded to) and comparative freedom from race prejudice. The French, furthermore, were less numerous than the English and their main centers were much farther away. They therefore seemed to many of the Ohio Indians to be less menacing than the English.

All in all, it seemed to the western Shawnees and Delawares that they could preserve their freedom more surely if they remained in the Ohio country in touch with the French; and Pennsylvania never succeeded in bringing them to heel.



Pennsylvania's Indian Wars

THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR

A PART FROM some minor local incidents and the loss of a few traders' goods during King George's War (1744-1748), Pennsylvania suffered no serious Indian disturbances for sixty-four years after William Penn received his charter. As a result, the people of the province came to believe that the peace William Penn had bequeathed to them was indestructible. When in 1753 the French brought armed forces to Presque Isle and prepared to occupy the Allegheny Valley, Pennsylvanians continued to think themselves secure behind the Allegheny Mountains and the Iroquois alliance. The surrender of Fort Necessity on July 4, 1754, did not rouse them, nor did Braddock's defeat on July 9, 1755.

The massacre at Penns Creek near present Selinsgrove in October, 1755, changed all that. It was seen at once that Pennsylvania's Indian policy was no longer sufficient. The Iroquois were not strong enough to stand alone in the west against France and her Indian allies. It was suspected (rightly) that some Seneca war parties engaged in

hostilities against other Indians had been diverted from their original objectives (as Captain Jean-Daniel Dumas boasted at Fort Duquesne) and turned against the English settlements. It was feared that the Delawares and Shawnees, who knew the trails across Pennsylvania, might use them to take revenge on the settlers who had supplanted them.

Up to the last minute, the Delawares were uncertain what to do. They had not forgotten their former happy relations with William Penn, but neither had they forgotten the Walking Purchase and its Wyoming aftermath. It will be remembered that, when they were expelled from the Forks of the Delaware and from the Minisinks, the Six Nations had given them the Wyoming Valley to be their home forever. Now white men from Connecticut claimed that in 1754 they had purchased Wyoming from the Six Nations. When the French reminded the Delawares of these grievances and threatened to chastise them if they did not attack the English, they dropped their ceremonial role of "women" in the Iroquois Longhouse and lifted the hatchet.

War parties from Nescopeck on the North Branch of the Susquehanna carried gun and scalping knife into the valleys south and east of the Blue Mountains, while from Kittanning on the Allegheny River Captain Jacobs and Shingas ravaged settlements on the Juniata and Conococheague.

The policy of the French and Indians was to ruin Pennsylvania's economy by driving the farmers off the land. The province countered by raising troops and establishing a line of forts along the mountains. These stockades were placed at strategic positions, some on waterways, most of them at the junction of important trails; for it was known that Indian warriors traveled the regular highways until their objectives were approached, when they fanned out through the woods to finish the job with stealth and a final war whoop.

The Delawares and Shawnees did not often engage in pitched battles. Their numbers were too small to justify the risks that such open methods exposed them to. Instead, small raiding parties attacked individual farms, killed or captured whomever they found in the fields or the houses, destroyed the cattle, burned the buildings, and disappeared into the forest with their prisoners. Pennsylvania's defense against these tactics was to patrol the intervals between the forts with provincial troops. This gave little enough protection to farms in the neighborhood, because raiding parties could slip easily through the cordon; but the forts and the patrols served to make any deep penetration of the settlements unsafe for the raiders. Conrad Weiser's com-

ment on an early skirmish at Dietrich Six's in Berks County was typical of the war along this border: "The Enemy not beat but scared off."

It was known, however, that the Indians could, if they had to, fight a formal battle. While it is true that some professional soldiers looked on them as "undisciplined savages," other men knew better. Colonel James Smith, who was captured early in the French and Indian War, had a profound respect for the Indians as warriors. After being among them for some years (he was adopted by the Wyandots), he had this to say about their military capacity:

They are under good command, and punctual in obeying orders: they can act in concert, and when their officers lay a plan and give orders, they will chearfully unite in putting all their directions into immediate execution; and by each man observing the motion or movement of his right hand companion, they can communicate the motion from right to left, and march abreast in concert, and in scattered order, though the line may be more than a mile long, and continue, if occasion requires, for a considerable distance, without disorder or confusion. They can perform various necessary manœuvres, either slowly, or as fast as they can run: they can form a circle, or semi-circle: the circle they make use of, in order to surround their enemy, and the semi-circle if the enemy has a river on one side of them. They can also form a large hollow square, face out and take trees: this they do, if their enemies are about surrounding them, to prevent from being shot from either side of the tree.¹

It was a shock to colonial confidence when, at the end of July, 1756, Fort Granville on the Juniata, just west of modern Lewistown, was captured by French and Indian forces under Louis Coulon de Villiers (who two years earlier had taken Fort Necessity) and the Delaware war chief Captain Jacobs.

To restore Pennsylvania's morale, a commando raid was led by Colonel John Armstrong against the western Delaware base at Kittanning. On the morning of September 8, 1756, the town was attacked. With the advantage of surprise and a superiority of three to one (as William A. Hunter explains in "Victory at Kittanning"²), Armstrong destroyed much of the town. Captain Jacobs at the outset ordered his women and children to flee to the woods, and then made his house the main center of resistance. When its bark covering was set on fire and he was called on to surrender or be burned alive, Captain Jacobs (according to a story repeated by James Smith) replied, "I eat fire,"

¹ Darlington (ed.), *Life and Travels of Col. James Smith*, 150-51.

² *Pennsylvania History*, XXIII (1956), 376-407.

and fought to the death. Before he died, according to a prisoner, Hugh Gibson, Jacobs alone killed fourteen of Armstrong's men.

In the face of Indian reinforcements from across the Allegheny River, Armstrong retired. He had lost heavily in killed, wounded, and missing, and he himself had been injured. Nevertheless he had accomplished his purpose. The raid caused the Delawares to withdraw their settlements to less exposed positions on the Beaver River, and news of this first Indian setback lifted Pennsylvania's morale.

In July, 1756, Fort Augusta had been built at Shamokin (Sunbury), where the North Branch and West Branch of the Susquehanna come together and where Indian paths converged from all directions. The establishment of a military post there served two important purposes. It gave protection to the down-river settlements, and it gave the Six Nations and other Indian friends of the English a restored confidence in Pennsylvania. The Indian world saw that the province was capable of defending itself.

The war dragged on, the Indian part of it fought as much with diplomacy as with gunfire. After Braddock's defeat, there were no further crucial engagements in Pennsylvania. At one time the province offered a bounty for Indian scalps, but withdrew it, partly in deference to Quaker scruples, partly because of the suspicion that unscrupulous scalp bounty hunters found the hair of friendly Indians (shot in the back) easier to come by than scalps taken in battle.

Indian conferences were held in which Delaware motives and objectives were explored. It would appear that fear of the French, who were strong in the west, had caused the Delawares to take up the hatchet. The desire for revenge was a contributing motive. The Indians resented not merely being cheated out of their lands but, as Teedyuscung said, being mocked for it afterwards. They wanted "a place in the sun." Teedyuscung's principal request at Easton in October, 1758, was that his people be given a deed for land to be reserved for them *in perpetuity*, not subject to the tricky manipulations that had hitherto kept most Indian borders in a turmoil.

In the back of men's minds was the enigma of the Six Nations. Were the Iroquois no longer able, or were they unwilling, to control the Delawares? The answer to that question came at the Easton Treaty in October, 1758, when the Six Nations, climaxing a long campaign of diplomatic pressure, brought Teedyuscung, leader of the Delawares, to heel. The Six Nations, on behalf of their Nephews, made peace with Pennsylvania over his head.

News of this peace treaty, which a brave Moravian, Christian Frederick Post, carried to the Ohio-Allegheny country, detached many

of the Indians there from the French and helped to break French resistance in that quarter. When General John Forbes reached the Forks of the Ohio on November 25, 1758, he found that Fort Duquesne had been evacuated and burned the day before. The French continued to hold Fort Machault at Venango (Franklin) and the forts at Le Boeuf and Presque Isle for another year. On July 6, 1759, French and Indians made an unsuccessful attack at Fort Ligonier. But in the same month the British under Sir William Johnson captured Fort Niagara, a victory that cut Canada's communications with the Ohio country and caused the abandonment by the French of their remaining three forts.

PONTIAC'S WAR

Pontiac's War was a natural aftermath of the French and Indian War. The Indians in the west were as much opposed to English claims there as they had been to those of France. When the English, after driving the French from such key points as Detroit and the Forks of the Ohio, prepared to make their own occupation permanent, the Indians were alarmed. They were, moreover, infuriated by the arrogance of General Jeffery Amherst, commander-in-chief of British forces in North America. His directives (issued despite the warnings of Sir William Johnson and his Pennsylvania agent George Croghan) ignored Indian interests and disdained Indian courtesies. The camaraderie which French settlers and *coureurs de bois* (half-breed hunters and trappers) had enjoyed with the Indians was forbidden to the English. Hunting suffered because the issuance of powder and lead to the Indians was deliberately stinted. The Senecas were angry because white men who murdered Indians were seldom brought to justice, while Indians who retaliated in kind were, if surrendered according to agreement, tried in strictly English courts and hanged. Rumor spread that the English planned to exterminate them.

Pontiac, a chief of the Ottawas (who, like the Wyandots, Chippewas, and Potawatomies, lived at this time in the general vicinity of Detroit), was a moving spirit in a campaign intended to redress these grievances by driving the English out of the country. Soon the Delawares, Senecas, and Shawnees on the western borders of Pennsylvania were drawn into the struggle.

In the spring of 1763 the Indians began the siege of Detroit. They captured Fort Sandusky on May 16; Fort Miamis, May 27; Fort Ouiatenon, June 1; Fort Michilimackinac, June 2. In Pennsylvania the pattern was much the same. Late in May, Senecas and Delawares began to harass Fort Pitt. On June 16 the Senecas captured Fort

Venango (Franklin), and on June 18 they took Fort Le Boeuf. Four days later the Senecas, joining a party of Ottawas, Chippewas, and Wyandots, helped to capture Fort Presque Isle (Erie).

First blood at Fort Pitt was drawn when two soldiers were killed on May 29, but nothing like a regular siege began before July 27. Meantime Colonel Henry Bouquet had been sent out from the east with a relief column. The commandant at Fort Pitt, Captain Simeon Ecuyer, was confident. He had a good stockade, sixteen cannon, and 250 men. He was also ruthless. Following a suggestion made by Colonel Bouquet and approved by General Amherst, he sent the Delawares a present of blankets infected with smallpox.

Colonel Bouquet, a Swiss soldier of fortune who had entered the British service, left Carlisle on July 18 with a force of 460 men. Among them were parts of two Scottish regiments, the 77th and 42nd (the Black Watch), together with a battalion of Royal Americans and a few Rangers. This small striking force was somewhat reduced in numbers by the necessity of leaving a company at Fort Bedford. Having had no news from Fort Pitt for over a month, Bouquet left his wagons at Fort Ligonier and hurried on with 340 packhorses carrying flour for the besieged. The flour bags, as it turned out, helped to save him from a disaster like the one that had overtaken Braddock.

Believing this to be a race against time, Bouquet avoided the safe, dry, but roundabout route which General Forbes had cautiously taken on his approach to Fort Duquesne five years before. Instead, he took the more direct route which passed through the defiles of Turtle Creek, where he half expected to meet an ambush. The Indians, as it turned out, fell on him before he reached that point. On August 4, 1763, just as they were about to make camp at Bushy Run after a march of seventeen miles, Bouquet's forces were attacked by a body of Senecas, Delawares, and Shawnees. The soldiers fell back about a mile to a low hill, where they defended themselves throughout the night and part of the next day, protected by a parapet of flour bags. The horses and the wounded were kept in the center.

It is not known for certain who led the Indians in this well-directed attack. Most likely it was Mud Eater (Gaustarax), a Seneca of great influence among his own people though little known among white men. The tradition which gives the credit to the better-known Guyasuta (Kiasutha) is probably mistaken.

Bouquet had about four hundred men. He has left no estimate of the Indian forces opposing him. Sir William Johnson afterwards put their number at ninety-five, which is probably an underestimate.

Bouquet's losses in the engagement were fifty killed, sixty wounded, and five missing.

"I intended to have halted to Day at Busly Run," begins Bouquet's classic description of this battle in a letter of August 5 to General Amherst. He ended a second letter to the Commander-in-Chief next night with the solemn words, "if we have another Action, we Shall hardly be able to Carry our Wounded."³

He had, however, fought a more successful action on the second day than he knew at the time. By a ruse (feigning retreat in the center and, when the enemy rushed in, attacking from both flanks, first with rifle fire and then with the bayonet) he inflicted such losses as the Indians could not long sustain. They disappeared into the forest, allowing him to reach Fort Pitt four days later, August 10.

Fort Pitt was thus saved, and the siege of Detroit was raised some time later. These two key points of the military line held firm, although the country between them fell into Indian hands. For months to come, the British had to guard their convoys with large forces. But in 1764 Bouquet took an army west into the Indian country and, in a treaty held at the Forks of the Muskingum, brought hostilities to an end.

At this treaty, white prisoners in Indian hands were surrendered. Some of them returned afterwards to the Indian families into which they had been adopted. In the Orderly Book of Colonel Henry Bouquet for October 29, 1764, we read:

As there will be many among them [the white prisoners] who are very much attached to the Savages by having lived wth them from their Infancy, These if not narrowly watched may be apt to make their Escape after they are delivered up: The Guards and Centinels therefore on this duty must be particularly attentive to prevent such accidents happening.⁴

The editor of the above passage notes that "the Shawnees were forced to bind some of the persons to be surrendered, several of the women actually escaping and returning to the savages."⁵ Such things often happened at the surrender of prisoners. Major Ebenezer Denny observed in his military journal, May 14, 1786: "Several of the boys, and even one young woman of the prisoners, made their escape and returned to the Indians."⁶ Conrad Richter's novel, *The Light in the Forest*, is based on such an incident.

³ S. K. Stevens, Donald H. Kent, and Leo J. Roland (eds.), *The Papers of Col. Henry Bouquet*, 19 vols. (Harrisburg, 1940-1943), Series 21634, pp. 227, 230.

⁴ *Western Pennsylvania Historical Magazine*, XLII (1959), 287-88.

⁵ *Ibid.*, 299.

⁶ Historical Society of Pennsylvania, *Memoirs*, VII (1860), 288.

THE PAXTON BOYS

A breed of "Indian haters" which, since the beginning of the French and Indian War, had been growing up on the Pennsylvania border, was brought to maturity by fears inspired during Pontiac's War. The Paxton Boys, so called because the core of them came from the Paxton or Paxtang (Harrisburg) district, provided the most notable example. Their guiding spirit was not the Reverend John Elder, pastor of the Paxton Presbyterian Church, though he has been blamed for the excesses committed by some of his parishioners. John Elder was no pacifist, but he tried to restrain the wilder spirits about him. The ringleader was the excitable Lazarus Stewart, an elder in the church.

On December 14, 1763, the Paxton Boys murdered a number of friendly and defenseless Indians at Conestoga, where a remnant of the Susquehannocks with a few other Indians had been living quietly under the protection of the Pennsylvania government. A few days later Ben Hershey, a Mennonite, overheard the Paxton Boys plotting a second massacre, the Indians who had escaped the first having been taken to Lancaster for safety. The Mennonite risked his life to give warning to the authorities; but these paid too little attention, and on December 27 the Paxton Boys entered Lancaster unopposed and butchered all the Indian refugees, most of them old men, women, and children.

There is a tradition in Brecknock Township, Lancaster County, that one of the Conestoga Indians who had escaped both massacres was secretly given protection for the rest of his life on a farm near Alleghenyville. It is known for certain that two elderly Indians from Conestoga survived, having been living as servants on the farm of Ben Hershey's son Christian at the time of the massacres. A few months later they were given a safe conduct dated August 17, 1764. The document explained that the bearers, Michael and Mary, his wife, were "friendly Indians of the Delaware Tribe, who formerly resided with other Indians in the Conestago Manor," and that they had for the past fifteen months or more been living with Christian Hershey at his plantation in Warwick Township, Lancaster County. All persons were called upon to treat them with civility and "to afford them all necessary assistance."⁷

By the Conestoga massacres the Paxton Boys drew attention to a new intolerance in Pennsylvania and also to a growing division between east and west, a division which was not to be healed until after the Revolution and the Whiskey Rebellion. They drew attention also

⁷ *Pennsylvania Archives*, 2d Series, II, 739.

to the government's inability to protect friendly Indians. This last was to have unfortunate results during the Revolution, when friendly Delawares were found unwilling to come under the protection of Fort Pitt, fearing lest the government of the United States prove as powerless as that of colonial Pennsylvania had been to protect her Indian friends from what Benjamin Franklin called "white savages."

Meanwhile the Moravian Indians near Bethlehem had been taken to Philadelphia for safety, the Paxton Boys having made clear their intention of exterminating them. When citizens of Philadelphia (good Quakers included) took up arms to defend these Christian Indian wards, the Paxton Boys turned back, contenting themselves for the time with a public statement of their grievances. In 1765 the Moravian Indians left Philadelphia for Wyalusing on the North Branch of the Susquehanna, where they remained until 1772, at which time they moved to the Ohio country.

The guiding spirit of the Paxton Boys, Lazarus Stewart, was officially proclaimed an outlaw. He escaped to Wyoming (Wilkes-Barre), where he joined the Connecticut forces in the Pennamite Wars. It is one of history's ironies that he died in the Massacre of Wyoming, July 3, 1778.

WYOMING

There is good reason to give the story of the Wyoming Valley a section to itself, for though it overlaps the French and Indian War, Pontiac's War, and the Revolutionary War, its parts are all bound together. There were two massacres of Wyoming, one in 1763 during Pontiac's War, the other in 1778 during the Revolutionary War; but to separate them is to break the current of history. They were but two episodes in a single theme. To understand that theme is a first necessity to any coherent view of Pennsylvania's Indian history.

From 1742 to 1779 the Wyoming Valley, always a favorite among the Indians, was the nub of Iroquois geopolitics. When in 1742 Canasatego "took the Delawares by the hair," as the Indian phrase ran, and settled the Walking Purchase dispute by ordering them out of the Forks of the Delaware and into the Wyoming Valley, he was acting in the interests of a long-range Iroquois policy.

It should be explained that the Iroquois maintained their power so late in American history, despite their small numbers, not so much by brute force (though they could still pack a wallop) as by skillful diplomacy and especially by the playing of the English and French against each other. In the contest which these two European powers were conducting in America, the Iroquois as a whole leaned toward

the English; but at the same time they were aware of English encroachments. Settlers were shouldering their way up the Susquehanna. The fertile Wyoming Valley on the North Branch, protected as it was on all sides by mountains or river gorges, was an outpost to be preserved at all costs. "Whoever controlled Wyoming," writes the biographer of Teedyuscung, "at once blocked white expansion northward from Pennsylvania into the Iroquois country and controlled the war and diplomatic trails from Shamokin to Onondaga."⁸

When in 1749 the proprietary government bought from the Six Nations a tract north of the Kittatinny Mountain, which turned out to contain Pennsylvania's best coal regions, the Indians were not shown a proper map of the purchase lest, as Conrad Weiser warned, on seeing how close these lands came to Wyoming, they should refuse to ratify the contract. Being unable to colonize the valley themselves yet being determined to hold it, the Iroquois made it a policy, as has been seen, to invite Indians of other nationalities to settle there. Certain bands of Shawnees came in 1701. Some Munsee Delawares came to nearby Lackawanna in 1728 and others came after the Walking Purchase.

The Nanticokes took up position here in 1748. Their removal five years later to Chenango, there to guard the more immediate approaches to the Longhouse, set in motion a series of events that led to the massacres of Wyoming.

The Nanticokes, shortly before their departure, sent a deputation across the mountains to the Moravian mission at Gnadenhütten (Lehighton) to invite the Christian Indians there—Delawares and Mahicans—to come north and occupy the Wyoming Flats. Teedyuscung, recently baptized by the Moravians (with some hesitation on their part), still felt the call of the blood. He sincerely admired the white man and desired to be a Christian; but he sympathized with the Indians' desire for independence, and he understood how important it was for the Wyoming Valley to be held by men of his race. Accordingly, with the help of the Mahican Abraham, he organized a band of some sixty-five or seventy Indians who settled themselves at Wyoming under the Six Nations shield.

Pennsylvania encouraged the move. She was aware that Connecticut was casting an eye on the valley, claiming it on the strength of her own early charter, which antedated Penn's. Pennsylvania wished to have good Indian friends settled there (under authority of the Six

⁸ Anthony F. C. Wallace, *King of the Delawares: Teedyuscung, 1700-1763* (Philadelphia, 1949), 48.

Nations, who had promised in 1736 to sell only to Pennsylvania) in order to forestall the New Englanders.

The Iroquois gave full assurance that they would not let the North Branch Valley go.

We will never part with the Land at Shamokin and Wyomink [said Chief Hendrick of the Mohawks, July 5, 1754, to John Penn and the commissioners of Pennsylvania at Albany]; our Bones are scattered there, and on this Land there has always been a great Council Fire. We desire You will not take it amiss that we will not part with it, for We reserve it to settle such of our Nations upon as shall come to us from the Ohio, or any others who shall deserve to be in our Alliance. Abundance of Indians are moving up and down, and We shall invite all such to come and live here, that so We may strengthen ourselves.⁹

That was the crucial year, 1754, in the Wyoming story, when the Susquehanna Company made the dubious Wyoming Purchase and set the stage for violence. The Six Nations announced repeatedly, at Onondaga, Albany, and Philadelphia, that the so-called purchase was a fraud: the Onondaga Council had not authorized a sale, but company agents at different times had pulled individual Indians aside, made them drunk, got them to make their marks on documents they did not understand, and announced that this was council action validating the purchase.

Conrad Weiser, early in the winter, had a conversation with Shickellamy's son John, who since his father's death had acted as the Six Nations supervisor of this area. The chief said, as Weiser reported it on March 1, 1755:

that whosoever of the white should venture to Settle any land on Wyomock or thereabout, belonging hitherto to the Indians, will have his Creatures killed first, and then If they did not desist they them self would be Killed, without distinction, let the Consequence be what it would.¹⁰

John Shickellamy was not fooling. Like his father, he was a friend of the English, but he knew what his own people felt about the Wyoming lands. Unhappily his warning went unheeded in some quarters, and the truth of what he said to Weiser had to be recorded in blood.

When the French and Indian War broke out, Teedyuscung, leader of the Susquehanna Delawares, after a brief period of indecision yielded to French persuasion, flouted the authority of his Uncles, the Six Nations, and attacked white settlements in Pennsylvania. When

⁹ Pennsylvania, *Colonial Records*, VI, 116.

¹⁰ *Pennsylvania Archives*, 1st Series, II, 260.

he found fortune deserting the French, he returned to his earlier allegiance, requesting that he be anchored in friendship with the English by receiving from them a permanent land base for his people. He proposed that Pennsylvania deed to him for that purpose some two million acres with its southern base in the Wyoming Valley.

"I sit here," he said (using the pronoun "I" correctly, according to Indian usage, for the people whom he represented), "as a Bird on a Bow [bough]; I look about and do not know where to go; let me therefore come down upon the Ground, and make that my own by a good Deed, and I shall then have a Home for Ever. . . ."¹¹

The request was not granted. Teedyuscung, with his band of Susquehanna Delawares, remained at Wyoming for some uneasy years, keeping an eye on the trail from Cushetunk on the upper Delaware, where armed Connecticut "settlers" were assembling in a body for an advance into the disputed valley.

The trouble came to a head in 1762, when the New Englanders began to cut a wagon road from Cushetunk and prospecting parties arrived at Wyoming. Teedyuscung warned them off. He was offered pay if he would join them in surveying the land. He refused. They stole his horse. He threatened to arrest them and take them to the governor in Philadelphia. They gave him a new horse and decamped, saying, however, that they would return in the spring with thousands of armed men. The Six Nations stood behind him and in March, 1763, promised the New Englanders war if they attempted to seize the valley.

On April 19 of that year Teedyuscung was burned to death in his cabin. Almost at the same time twenty other Indian houses in the town went up in flames. The surviving Indians fled and did not return.

Rumors were at once set in circulation. One was that the Six Nations had executed Teedyuscung for old faults committed years before, during the French and Indian War; another, that the Delawares themselves had fired the town in a drunken frolic. Both Iroquois and Delawares accused the Connecticut company. *Cui bono?* Who stood to gain? The records of the Susquehanna Company suddenly go dead at this point, but in the light of all the evidence from other sources, it is not surprising that the Indians believed white men to be responsible for the murder of Teedyuscung.

Two or three weeks after the murder, Connecticut families took up residence in the valley. On October 15, 1763, there occurred the first Massacre of Wyoming. That was when Captain Bull, a son of

¹¹ Pennsylvania, *Colonial Records*, VIII, 203.

Teedyuscung, swept through the valley with a Delaware war party and left no white people alive in it. Some were tortured and killed. About twenty were led into captivity. Three or four escaped.

Soon after the conclusion of Pontiac's War, Connecticut settlers were back again in the Wyoming Valley. Thereafter the quarrel, climaxing in the Pennamite Wars, was waged for the most part among white men rather than between white men and Indians. But the Iroquois continued to keep a jealous eye on the valley. The Moravians at Friedenshütten (Wyalusing) noted in their diary on June 14, 1768: "Two Mohawks arrived, sent by the Six Nations to the Yankees: 'that if they did not leave Wyomick, they would come down and *strike their heads.*'"¹²

The Fort Stanwix Treaty of November 5, 1768, at which the Iroquois were induced to cede lands on the North Branch south of Towanda (including the Wyoming Valley), did not end Indian resentment. John Heckewelder observed that after the treaty the Six Nations sent the Christian Indians at Wyalusing "two Spanish dollars. . . as *their* share of the money for the land sold by them to the English"; and he added this significant note: "By sending the two dollars to the Christian Indians, the Six Nations meant to say, that thus they had been cheated by the English in the purchase made; for every five miles square they received 2 dollars."¹³

THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR

The years immediately preceding the American Revolution found Indian relations in the colonies deteriorating. The governments of New York, Pennsylvania, and Virginia were unable to restrain their border populations, who murdered Indians wholesale and with impunity. George Croghan, known as "Prince of Traders," complained in 1768 of "the Repated Murders on those Fronteers and y^e. Want of power in y^e. Goverment to bring y^e. Murdreres to punishment. . . ." Benjamin Franklin observed, "It grieves me to hear that our Frontier People are yet greater Barbarians than the Indians, and continue to murder them in time of Peace."¹⁴ In the Yellow Creek massacre of April, 1774, on the Ohio, thirteen members of Logan's (i.e., John Shickellamy's) family were killed. "There runs not a drop of my blood in the veins of any living creature. . . . Who is there to mourn

¹² *Now and Then*, V (1936), 62.

¹³ *A Narrative of the Mission of the United Brethren Among the Delaware and Mohegan Indians* . . . (Philadelphia, 1820), 108.

¹⁴ Sullivan, Flick, and Hamilton (eds.), *Papers of Sir William Johnson*, XII, 425, 178.

for Logan?—Not one!" So ends "Logan's Lament," as reported to John Gibson and presented to the world by Thomas Jefferson.

At first, after the Revolution had broken out, both Americans and British advised the Indians to "sit still." But before long that policy was abandoned by both sides. The British, in order to divert American forces from the more crucial areas of conflict in the east, opened a new front in the west. Agents from Detroit—Matthew Elliot, Alexander McKee, and Simon Girty—went among the Indians reminding them of their grievances and stirring up their fears. Some Americans, on the other hand, at one time played with the idea of forming a fourteenth (Indian) state, if the Indians would support them in the war.

Unhappily, the militia of Pennsylvania and Virginia gave some substance to the Indians' distrust. Friendly Delawares were alienated by the "Squaw Campaign." That was in February, 1778, when a body of militia, failing to reach their objective—some British stores at Cuyahoga—because of the heavy rains, satisfied themselves with shooting up and plundering friendly Delaware camps on the Shenango River near present New Castle, Pennsylvania, and on Mahoning Creek at the Salt Spring (Niles, Ohio). They killed several women and a small boy, wounded and captured the mother of an eminent Delaware chief, Captain Pipe, and killed his brother (the only grown man in the two Indian camps), whom George Morgan declared to be "a noted friend to the United States."¹⁵ A wave of anti-American sentiment swept over Delaware councils. Captain Pipe demanded war. It was with difficulty that Captain White Eyes, who was resolutely favorable to the Americans, managed to keep the Delawares neutral for a few more months.

Meanwhile the Iroquois had come into the war, disunited. For two years they had resisted solicitation from both sides, English and American. They were resolved to keep out of the white man's quarrel. But in the end they were sucked in. "You can't live in the woods and stay neutral," was an Iroquois saying that had come down from the French and Indian War.

The Confederacy as such took no action. Each of the Six Nations was left to choose its own course. Four of them—Mohawks, Onondagas, Cayugas, and Senecas—decided for the British, but the Oneidas and a large part of the Tuscaroras decided for the "Thirteen Fires." Lafayette's bodyguard was a Tuscarora, Nicholas Cusick. Near Valley Forge, a body of Oneidas performed a gallant action that should be better remembered in American annals.

¹⁵ Morgan to the Board of War, July 17, 1778, quoted in Louise Phelps Kellogg (ed.), *Frontier Advance on the Upper Ohio, 1778-1779* (Madison, Wisconsin, 1916), 113.

Lafayette, with over two thousand men, had crossed the Schuylkill to observe the movements of the British, who were preparing to leave Philadelphia. On May 20, 1778, finding himself about to be cut off by superior British forces, he barely managed to reach Matson's Ford at Conshohocken, a little ahead of the enemy. To save his men from disaster as they waded the chest-deep ford, he posted the Oneidas as a rear guard. General Peter Muhlenberg, whose troops held advanced lines at Valley Forge, described the incident to his father, the Reverend Henry Melchior Muhlenberg, who put it all down in his diary:

The Indians were the last to get over, and they were surrounded in a small thicket by the English light cavalry, but they retired behind the trees in accord with their custom and let loose their usual hideous war whoops, which threw the horses and riders into confusion and sent them flying; whereupon the Indians shot several of the cavalymen and gathered up their lost cloaks.¹⁶

As encouragement to the pro-American party among the Delawares, United States commissioners in a treaty at Pittsburgh, September 19, 1778, offered the tribe admission to the Union as part of a fourteenth Indian state. At about the same time White Eyes was made a colonel in the American army. Unfortunately, both gestures came to nothing. Colonel White Eyes died (murdered by the militia, according to George Morgan), and Congress did not ratify the treaty.

Most of the Delawares joined the British. Small war parties struck at American settlements. The only set battle in this western campaign of terror was at Upper Sandusky, Ohio, in June, 1782. That was when Colonel William Crawford, who had taken part in the Squaw Campaign, was defeated, captured, and burned at the stake by Captain Pipe's warriors.

Meanwhile in central Pennsylvania during the summer of 1778, a series of heavy raids, mostly from the Seneca country, had been directed against the Susquehanna Valley above Shamokin. A captured prisoner reported that it was the intention of the Indians to murder all the inhabitants on both branches of the river. Ownership of the land between Lycoming Creek and Pine Creek on the West Branch was a matter of continuing dispute. As for the North Branch, memory of the "Wyoming Purchase" still rankled.

The "Great Runaway" of May, 1778, which emptied the West Branch Valley of its settlers, was described by Lieutenant Samuel Hunter at Fort Augusta (Sunbury) in a letter to John Hambright of the Supreme Executive Council, which was then in Lancaster:

¹⁶ Theodore G. Tappert and John W. Doberstein (trans.), *The Journals of Henry Melchior Muhlenberg*, 3 vols. (Philadelphia, 1942-1958), III, 156.

We are Really in a Meloncoly situation in this County at present, the back inhabitants has all Evacuated their habitations and Assembled in different places; all above Muncy to Lycoming is come to Samuel Wallises, and the People of Muncy has gathered to Captain Bradys, all above Lycoming is at Antis's Mill & the mouth of Bald Eagle Creek, all the inhabitants of Penn's Valley is gathered to one place in Potters Township, the Inhabitants of White Dear Township is assembled at three Different places, and the Back settlers of Bufaloe is come down to the River, Penn's Township likewise has moved to the River, all from Muncy Hill to Chilisquake has assembled at three Different places, Fishing Creek and Mahoning Setlement has all come to the River side; . . . to think what a pannick prevails in this County; it is really Distressing to see the inhabitants flying away and leaving their all. . . .¹⁷

Settlement in the North Branch Valley came to an end with the Battle of Wyoming. That engagement was the climax of one of the great tragedies, in the classical sense, in American history. The defenders of Forty Fort were fighting for their homes and for the survival of a great humanitarian ideal embodied in the new nation to whose cause they committed their lives. They were unaware of the dark forces ranged against them: not only a three-to-one superiority in numbers but also the revival among the Indians of old memories coupled with a determination to recover their lost valley.

The massacre of prisoners that followed the Battle of Wyoming shocked the world and brought deep sympathy for the American cause. The name *Wyoming* became a synonym in men's minds for patriotic devotion and martyrdom. The English poet Thomas Campbell (after whom Campbell's Ledge, overlooking the Susquehanna above Pittston, has been named) has given the traditional view of the battle and its aftermath in *Gertrude of Wyoming*.

How did the engagement look from Indian eyes? Dr. Arthur Parker, former New York State Archaeologist, whose Seneca ancestors fought at Wyoming, has told us that the tactics employed by the Indians in that battle had been mapped out months before in consultation with the British. At a meeting of the whole Iroquois Confederacy at Onondaga (so we are informed by Daniel Claus in a manuscript preserved in the Canadian Archives at Ottawa), it was decided to undertake a campaign against the Wyoming settlement. The Mohawk Colonel Joseph Brant (principal promoter of the scheme) hoped by this means to offset the "Shock of Gen^l Burgoyne's Disaster." It was arranged that Brant should create a diversion in the north while Sakayengwaraghton, a Seneca chief, led his warriors into the Susque-

¹⁷ *Pennsylvania Archives*, 1st Series, VI, 570.

hanna Valley. Details were worked out in a conference at Montreal. Next spring at Niagara and later at Canadesaga (where Sakayengwaraghton assembled his forces) it was made known to the British that the Indians wanted to do this thing alone. When, nevertheless, Colonel John Butler attached himself to the expedition with some of his Rangers, the Indians found a way to push them aside. At the last moment, when his forces were about to be engaged, Sakayengwaraghton warned Butler to keep his men out of sight lest the Indians mistake them for enemies.

Sakayengwaraghton [wrote Claus] . . . put his plan in Execution making every preparation Disposition & Manoeuvre with his Ind^{ns}. himself and when the Rebels of Wayoming came to attack him desired Col^o Butler to keep his people separte from his for fear of Confusion and stood the whole Brunt of the Action himself for there were but 2. White Men [Rangers was crossed out in the original] killed; and then destroyed the whole Settlement without hurting or Molesting a Woman or Child w^{ch} these 2. Indⁿ Chiefs [Brant and Sakayengwaraghton] (to their honor be it said) [had] agreed upon . . . in the Spring.¹⁸

During the course of the battle, the Indians used tactics similar to those employed by Colonel Henry Bouquet at the Battle of Bushy Run. Early in the fighting, they appeared to give way, but, when the Americans pressed forward in pursuit, the Indians closed in on them from both sides and the rear. No quarter was given. The few men who were taken alive during the battle were killed that same night.

By an ironical twist of fate it appears to have been Lazarus Stewart, former ringleader of the Paxton Boys, who unwittingly gave victory to the Indians. Colonel Zebulon Butler, who was in command at Forty Fort, had not desired an engagement. He expected reinforcements, and he believed he could hold out until they arrived. He decided, therefore, against risking his inferior forces in open battle. But the excitable Lazarus Stewart so stirred up the men about him that they pressured the unwilling commander into making a sortie. Lazarus Stewart was among the slain.

Folklore has been hard at work on the Battle of Wyoming and has produced a number of distortions that should be corrected. In the first place, Joseph Brant has been blamed, mistakenly, for the killing of the prisoners. He was not at Wyoming but up in the Mohawk Valley. It is doubtful if Queen Esther was present at the massacre although tradition identifies her with the Indian woman who killed the prisoners at what is now known as "Queen Esther's Rock." The

¹⁸ Anecdotes of Captain Joseph Brant, by Daniel Claus, Niagara, 1778, Claus Papers, II, 61, Public Archives of Canada, Ottawa (microfilm).

tradition is out of key with her known character. She treated the Strobe family, who had been her prisoners since May of that year, with great kindness. The "Narrative" of Mrs. Whittaker (Jane Strobe) makes that clear. It is possible that at the time of the massacre Queen Esther may have been confused with Catharine Montour (wife of a Seneca chief), who, it is commonly thought, was her sister. Catharine's name, instead of Esther's, appears in several early accounts of the massacre as that of the "priestess" who presided at it. On the other hand, we know that Queen Esther, whatever her normal character, may have been inflamed to avenge the death of her son, who had been killed by American scouts the day before the battle.

Another tradition is that some three hundred persons, including women and children, were killed at Forty Fort after its surrender. There was no such massacre. The terms of capitulation were honorable. Some Indians got out of hand, and their chiefs were unable to restrain them from looting, but they did not injure the occupants of the fort, soldiers or civilians. A British deserter, Sergeant Boyd, was formally executed, but no other lives were taken. There were a few isolated cases of violence on the outlying farms when houses were burned and settlers expelled (as all were) from the valley. But the Massacre of Wyoming occurred on the battlefield, not among the refugees in Forty Fort.

The American reply to the Great Runaway and the Battle of Wyoming came in three parts, led by Colonel Hartley, Colonel Van Schaick, and General Sullivan. In September, 1778, Colonel Thomas Hartley led a reprisal raid over the Sheshequin Path to the Forks of the Susquehanna (Athens), where he destroyed a number of Indian settlements, among them these three: Tioga, Queen Esther's Town, and Old Sheshequin (Ulster).

In April, 1779, Colonel Goose Van Schaick invaded the country of the Onondagas, burned their principal town with its stores of corn, killed their cattle, and took a few prisoners.

Late in the summer of the same year, General John Sullivan, General James Clinton, and Colonel Daniel Brodhead, in a simultaneous movement, ravaged the Seneca country. On July 31 Sullivan set out from Wyoming for Tioga. Meanwhile Clinton had assembled his force at the foot of Otsego Lake, which he dammed to raise the level. On receiving word from Sullivan, he broke the dam and on the flood waters floated some of his men down the river in bateaux to Pennsylvania. At Fort Sullivan (Tioga) he joined General Sullivan's main force. The combined armies, amounting to some four thousand five hundred men, entered the Seneca country by way of the "Forbidden

Path"—forbidden, that is, to white men. A body of about six hundred Indians with a few British attempted to stop them in the narrows near Newtown (Elmira, New York); but Sullivan, with the help of an Oneida guide, outflanked and defeated them on August 29. Advancing, Sullivan burned towns, cornfields, and orchards, and drove many of the Indians back on the British base at Niagara for subsistence.

Among the forty Indian towns Sullivan destroyed were Canadesaga (Geneva)—a beautiful town of eighty houses, some of stone, some with window boxes filled with flowers—and Canandaigua, described as "a very pretty town." Sullivan reported also that he had destroyed 160,000 bushels of corn. His men were amazed at the Iroquois cornfields, superior to anything of the kind they had seen before.

While this was going on, Colonel Brodhead had set out from Fort Pitt with six hundred men on a diversionary raid against the Senecas' western flank. He had a skirmish at Thompson's Island nine miles below Conewango (Warren), burned Cornplanter's Town, destroyed some five hundred acres of corn, and then pulled out fast—before the Indians should have time to get themselves together. Contrary to popular tradition, he did not get as far into the Seneca country as Bucktooth (West Salamanca). Some western Senecas still say, "We won the war."

The Senecas were far from being knocked out, as may be gathered from their subsequent devastation of Westmoreland County and particularly the destruction of Hannastown, July 13, 1782. Indeed, the Sullivan Expedition drew them more furiously into the conflict. Hitherto they had sent out only scattered and occasional war parties. They were "dragging their feet" in the British service. But now they felt themselves committed as a nation.

Sullivan has been much criticized because he did not capture Fort Niagara, took only a very few prisoners, and failed to destroy the Iroquois war potential. Yet the expedition was by no means a failure. Sullivan had thrown many of the Iroquois back on Niagara, which was expensive to the British. He had destroyed vast fields of corn on the Chemung River, and, by the establishment of Fort Sullivan at Tioga, had made sure that this Indian food base should never again be used against the United States. The very fact that such a raid had been undertaken at all against the fabled Iroquois had done much to restore American morale.

After the Revolutionary War the United States made peace of a kind with the Indians in a series of treaties: in 1784 at Fort Stanwix with the Iroquois; in 1785 at Fort McIntosh with the Delawares and Wyandots; in 1786 at Fort Finney with the Shawnees; and in 1789 with all four of them again at Fort Harmar. The difficulty—as William Penn

had found—was to make sure that the right Indians (that is, chiefs with authority to speak for the various divisions of their people) attended the treaties and signed the documents. The commissioners were too often ignorant of Indian protocol. Only a few chiefs signed at Fort Stanwix in 1784, and the right of these to sign was afterwards contested. Of the Fort Harmar Treaty, John Heckewelder (who had lived for many years among the Indians) observed that he did not find among the signatures the name of even one great chief. For some years the Indians defeated attempts to overawe them by military force, as was seen in the overwhelming defeat administered to Major General Arthur St. Clair near Fort Wayne on November 4, 1791, by Indian confederates under the Miami, Chief Little Turtle.

White men—settlers, land speculators, and the United States government—sought to extinguish Indian land rights beyond the Ohio, which river had been established at the Fort Stanwix Treaty of 1768 as the permanent boundary between the races. The Indians of the Wabash and Maumee rivers—Miamis, Weas, Delawares, Shawnees, Wyandots, and others—had come together in a loose confederacy, not unlike that organized by Pontiac twenty years earlier, to resist encroachment on Indian land. They were successful for a time. The Iroquois sympathized with them, but sought for compromise. In 1794 the United States made a settlement with the Six Nations at Canandaigua, largely through the influence of Cornplanter and the women of the Confederacy. After Anthony Wayne's decisive victory on August 20 of that year at Fallen Timbers on the Maumee, the western Indians made a firm peace with the United States at the Treaty of Greenville, August 3, 1795. Pennsylvania's Indian wars were over.



The Cornplanter Grant

CORNPLANTER

DURING THE NINETEENTH and twentieth centuries, Pennsylvania's main link with the Indians has been through the Cornplanter Grant, a small tract of land on the Allegheny River just south of the New York state line.

Cornplanter (Gyantwahia), after whom the tract was named, was one of the Seneca war chiefs who fought against the United States during the Revolutionary War. Born about 1750, he was known sometimes as John Abeel (O'Bail), for he was the son of a Dutch trader and a Seneca woman of chiefly lineage. His uncle was Guyasuta. Cornplanter, rejected by his father, identified himself wholly with his mother's people.

After the war, he was spokesman in Iroquois councils for a policy of reconciliation with the United States. He helped to keep the Senecas from assisting the Miami confederacy, which defeated Brigadier General Harmar in 1790 and Major General St. Clair in 1791, but which was defeated by Anthony Wayne at Fallen Timbers in 1794.

In response to Cornplanter's friendly attitude, as shown at the Fort Harmar Treaty in 1789 and on his visit to Philadelphia in 1790, the legislature of Pennsylvania on January 29, 1791, granted to him and his heirs "in perpetuity" three tracts of land on the upper Allegheny. One of these, "Richland," near present West Hickory, he sold to his friend General John Wilkins, Jr. Another, the "Gift," was at what is now Oil City. It is said that when Cornplanter sold it in 1818, he was paid in worthless money and notes. Attempts by him and his heirs to recover the property or to get proper payment for it met with no success.

The third tract was some six hundred acres in extent, most of it on the west bank of the Allegheny just south of the New York state line. It included his own town of Jenuchshadego and two islands in the river.

Cornplanter was an Indian patriot of the best kind. He was generous, forward-looking, constructive. In 1798 he brought in Quaker teachers, established schools, made roads, built good houses, developed agriculture, bred large herds of cattle, and, in a word, turned the Cornplanter Grant into a model community. In his later years he became disillusioned with white men, closed the schools, broke his sword, and destroyed all other gifts received from white friends such as George Washington and Thomas Millin. He died February 18, 1836.

HANDSOME LAKE

Cornplanter's half brother Handsome Lake (Skaniadariyo) is remembered for the decisive influence he exerted in restoring Iroquois morale after the Revolutionary War. Handsome Lake himself suffered the moral and mental collapse that came to many Iroquois at the turn of the nineteenth century as they watched the breakup of their national home and saw the end of the Six Nations' heroic role in North American affairs.

Proud, frustrated, drunken, Handsome Lake lay on his pallet for years, expecting and hoping to die. But there came to him a series of visions in which, as he reported, he traveled the Sky Road and received from the Creator (through the Three Messengers) instructions on how to revitalize the Iroquois. He was to preach, not the old ideal of self-expression, but a new and puritanical self-control.

Recovering his health, he presented the Creator's message—*Gaiwiiio*, the Good Word or Gospel—first at Cornplanter's Town, then at Cold Spring, and later at Tonawanda. All these were Seneca communities. At the last place his teaching took such deep root that Tonawanda remains today the principal stronghold of what the Indians call the

"New Religion." In response to urging from the Three Messengers, he took the Good Word to Onondaga, capital of the Six Nations, that men might know the message was intended by the Creator not only for Senecas but for the whole Iroquois Confederacy. At Onondaga he was well received, but on August 10, 1815, a few days after his arrival, he died and for the last time journeyed (in company with the Fourth Messenger) over the Sky Road—the Milky Way—to the Land of Happy Spirits and the dwelling place of the Creator.

His followers launched a religious movement which spread throughout the Iroquois world, preaching the same strict morality and restoring a deserved pride in their race. The religion of Handsome Lake is today undergoing a strong revival. The Prophet's adherents constitute a large part of the Iroquois population in the United States and Canada. Their "Keepers of the Faith" conduct periodical meetings which last three, four, or even five days. Public worship consists of prayers of thanksgiving and intercession, exhortation, confession, religious dancing, the burning of sacred tobacco, and the recitation of the "Code of Handsome Lake"—the story of his career and a collection of his sayings.

According to Handsome Lake, there are four great sky trails leading to "the Land of Happy Spirits," one for each of the four great races of the world. The ethics of his code are essentially Christian. An Indian observer, Chief Joseph Montour (a Methodist preacher on the Six Nations Reserve), described the religion of Handsome Lake as "Christianity without the Redeemer."

The following selections from the code will serve to illustrate Handsome Lake's main purposes: to root out evils that threatened to destroy his people, to restore pride of race and confidence in the future, and to preserve the best of the beautiful old Iroquois customs.

1. The Creator made one-ga [oh-nay-ga, whisky or rum] and gave it to our younger brethren, the white man, as a medicine but they use it for evil. . . . No, the Creator did not make it for you.

44. You have had the constant fear that the white race would exterminate you. The Creator will care for his On-gwe-o-we [Iroquois].

60. It is a custom for thanksgiving to be made over the hills of planted corn. Let the head of the family make an invocation over the planted hills that the corn may continue to support life.

64. Let this be your ceremony when you wish to employ the medicine in a plant: First offer tobacco [sprinkling a little on the glowing embers of a fire]. Then tell the plant in gentle

words what you desire of it and pluck it from the roots. It is said in the upper world that it is not right to take a plant for medicine without first talking to it.

67. . . . Our grief adds to the sorrows of the dead. . . . Ten days shall be the time for mourning and when our friends depart [the soul leaving the earth on the tenth day] we must lay grief aside. . . . you can journey with the dead only as far as the grave.¹

Brooks Redeye, a Seneca Keeper of the Faith, on September 22, 1843, delivered a prayer, recorded at the time, of which the following is the substance:

God hear us. This rising smoke represents our faith in Thee. We thank Thee for our creation and for our enjoyment of the world Thou hast given us.

We also thank the Four Angels who are placed over us to guide us day and night.

We also thank the Thunders, servants of God, who nourish the earth.

We also thank the Sun that God put in the sky to give us light.

We also thank the Moon that God put up there.

We also thank the Waters that God meant to keep us from thirst.

We also thank the Earth that God has given us to walk upon.

We also thank the Trees that God placed on the land.

We also thank the Grasses and Herbs that God placed here for our medicine.

We also thank Silverlake [Handsome Lake], our prophet, who communicated with God's servants, the Four Angels, and who has now returned to Heaven and lives by the side of God.

We owe thanks to God for all the wonderful works he has done for us and for all the things he has given us to see day and night; and we pray God to continue these in return for our pure faith and for our proper and joyful performance of the worship songs and dances and games.²

Handsome Lake and his followers were largely responsible for the regeneration of the Iroquois, both as individuals and as a nation, in the early nineteenth century. The present Iroquois renaissance also owes much to the same influence.

¹ See Arthur C. Parker, *The Code of Handsome Lake* (Albany, 1913).

² Prayer of Brooks Redeye, September 22, 1843, Draper MSS, 22 F, 138 (Joseph Brant Papers), State Historical Society of Wisconsin (microfilm). The version in the text is a paraphrased version of the original manuscript.

20

Envoi

THE DELAWARES as a people have long since disappeared from Pennsylvania. Some bands moved north to the protection of the Iroquois Longhouse. Descendants of Pennsylvania's Moravian Indians, Delawares and Mahicans, now live in a community (the former Fairfield or Moraviantown) situated on the Thames River between London and Chatham in Kent County, Ontario, where their annual agricultural fair has won much praise. There is a large band of Delawares on the Six Nations Reserve near Brantford, Ontario. Their chiefly lineage traces descent from Shingas and Teedyuscung. Numbers of Munsees live at nearby Muncy town, where they keep alive the tradition that the descendants of the Wolf are the most lively and aggressive of all the Lenape.

The greater number of the Delawares removed to Ohio during the middle years of the eighteenth century, and there enjoyed some years of national prosperity under Netawatwees (Newcomer) and White Eyes. In 1830 a considerable body moved west to a reservation in eastern Kansas at the forks of the Kansas and Missouri rivers. After suffering much distress from white marauders, a large part of the Kansas Delawares moved south into the Indian Territory (Oklahoma) where they may still be found.

Other Delaware bands moved even farther afield. Those, for instance, who now live among the Caddo in Oklahoma had at one time wandered as far south as Mexico. A few Delawares are in Wisconsin. But it is the Delawares now settled among the Cherokees in Oklahoma who have longest preserved their native culture. Some of the ancient rites of the Big House Ceremony are still practiced among them.

The Iroquois, who planted the Tree of Peace in Pennsylvania before William Penn received his charter, are now a divided people, scattered over many reservations in the United States and Canada. But they are by no means broken. They still retain, whether on their vanishing toe-hold (the Cornplanter Grant) in Pennsylvania or on their reservations in New York, Wisconsin, Ontario, and Quebec, a strong national consciousness. "The Six Nations," they say, "will never die."

At the same time they are loyal supporters (whether or not they accept the citizenship offered them) of the American and Canadian governments under whose aegis they live. During the Second World War they put into the field, in the armies of the United States and Canada, over two thousand men—a greater number of warriors than they had ever assembled at one time during the Beaver Wars and the days of their greatest national glory.

But their numbers in Pennsylvania have in recent years declined. Few of Cornplanter's descendants now live on the grant, although it has remained for many of them a home, a place of refuge, to return to in time of depression or other emergency. Visitors from various parts of Iroquoia come to pay reverence to the Medicine Spring near which Handsome Lake had his visions and to pluck the sacred plants in that vicinity.

Today the six hundred acres of the Cornplanter Grant, with its sacred spring, are about to disappear beneath the waters of the Kinzua Dam.

Therefore let it be a Part of the present Agreement that We shall treat one another as Brethren to the latest Generation, even after We shall not have left a Foot of Land.

—Chief Hendrick of the Mohawks to the Pennsylvania Commissioners, Albany, July 5, 1754.

Famous Indians of Pennsylvania

ALLIQUIPPA, QUEEN. A Seneca woman, best known as the acknowledged chief of an Indian community in the vicinity of the Forks of the Ohio (Pittsburgh). She is said to have met William Penn at New Castle, Delaware, in 1701. In later years her home was in western Pennsylvania. Conrad Weiser in 1748 visited her on the Allegheny a short distance above the mouth of the Monongahela. In 1752 she was found living near the mouth of Chartier's Creek. George Washington in 1753 called on her at the mouth of the Youghiogheny. "Queen Aliquippa's Cornfield" is the name of a field by the Youghiogheny at Robbins Station (North Huntingdon Township, Westmoreland County) where Alliquippa's Indians are said to have come in the summer to raise corn. She died, 1754, at Aughwick, whither she had retired with other Indians friendly to Pennsylvania after Washington's surrender at Fort Mifflin.

ALLUMAPEES (OLUMAPIES). *See* SASSOONAN.

BALD EAGLE (WOAPALANNE). There is uncertainty about the career and even the identity of the Indian after whom Bald Eagle's Nest (now Milesburg), Bald Eagle Creek, Bald Eagle Mountain, and Bald Eagle Township (Clinton County) were named. It is known that a friendly and respected Indian named Bald Eagle was murdered by white men on the Monongahela in 1773. There is also a tradition that during the Revolutionary War a Munsee Delaware chief named Bald Eagle led war parties from "the Nest" against settlements in the West Branch Valley. He is said to have killed James Brady near Williamsport in August, 1778, and to have been killed himself by James' elder brother Sam near Brady's Bend (Clarion County) on the Allegheny in June, 1779.

BEAVER (TAMAQUA). A leading man of the Unalachtigo (Turkey) division of the Delawares. He at one time lived on the upper Schuylkill River with his uncle Sassoonan (Olumapies) and his brothers Shingas and Pisquetomen. After the sale of the Tulpehocken lands in 1732, he went to the Ohio, living for a time at the mouth of the Beaver River (the present city of Beaver), then at Kuskusky (New Castle), and later at Tuscarawas (near present Bolivar, Ohio). Although the Iroquois in 1752 had appointed Shingas head chief, after the French and Indian War many of the western Delawares acknowledged Beaver as their "king" or chief spokesman. The Beaver on many occasions befriended Pennsylvania. In 1759 he officially buried the hatchet which the western Indians had raised against the English colonies. In 1762, shortly before Pontiac's War, he warned John Heckewelder that the Indians had resolved on war with the British, and so helped to save the missionary's life. After the conclusion of the war, he co-operated with Colonel Bouquet in the return of white prisoners. He died in 1769 in what is now Gnadenhütten, Ohio.

CANASATEGO. Onondaga chief, member of the Six Nations' Great Council. He is remembered in Pennsylvania as the principal speaker for the Iroquois at Philadelphia, 1742, when Delaware complaints against the Walking Purchase were examined. Canasatego, presenting the Iroquois decision, ordered the Delawares to leave the Forks of the Delaware and Minisinks and to move to the Susquehanna at Wyoming (Wilkes-Barre) or Shamokin (Sunbury). He attended Indian conferences at Lancaster, 1744, and Philadelphia, 1742 and 1749. Conrad Weiser visited him at Onondaga, 1743 and 1745. He died in 1750.

CHARTIER, PETER. Son of the French-Canadian trader Martin Chartier and his Shawnee wife. Peter, brought up among the Shawnees, married a Shawnee wife and traded at Shawnee settlements in Lancaster County, at Paxtang, at the mouth of Shawnee (Yellow Breeches) Creek across the river from present Harrisburg, and on the Conodoguinet near the site of Carlisle. By 1730 he was trading with the Shawnees on the Conemaugh, and soon after he extended his business to the Allegheny. After about 1734 his principal seat was Chartier's Town (Tarentum) on the Allegheny, which he and the Shawnee chief Neucheconneh had founded. He became leader of the Shawnees who had migrated from eastern Pennsylvania. About 1741 Chartier and his band "accepted the French Hatchet." In 1745 he with some three or four hundred Shawnees, descending the Allegheny River on their way to the Scioto, met the Pennsylvania traders Dunning and Tostee, took them prisoner, and stole their goods. Chartier and his party proceeded down the Ohio to the Shawnee Town at the mouth of the Scioto and thence overland to near the site of Winchester, Kentucky. Some of the Shawnees under Chief Neucheconneh returned, but not Peter Chartier.

CORNPLANTER (GYANTWAHIA). Influential Seneca leader, though not a *royaner* or hereditary chief; half brother of Chief Handsome Lake (founder of the Iroquois "New Religion") and nephew of Guyasuta. His mother was a Seneca woman of chiefly lineage and his father was a Dutch trader from Albany named John Abeel. Cornplanter was born about 1750 at Ganawaugus (Avon) on the Genesee River. In 1780 he became Head Man of that town. In later years he made his home at Jenuchshadego (Burnt House), better known as Cornplanter's Town. From this center he supervised alien Indians on the Allegheny-Ohio for the Iroquois Confederacy. During the Revolutionary War he fought for the British, but after its conclusion he urged reconciliation and helped to keep his people from joining in the Indian war for the Northwest Territory. For his many conciliatory acts, Pennsylvania gave him deeds for three tracts of land, only one of which now remains: the Cornplanter Grant, about to be submerged by the Kinzua Dam. He died in 1836.

ESTHER, QUEEN. Commonly thought to be a daughter of French Margaret and a granddaughter (in the Indian sense) of Madame Montour. She married Eghohowin, a Munsee chief. Shortly after the French and Indian War, she moved with her family from the West Branch to the North Branch of the Susquehanna, settling near the Moravian mission at Sheshequin (Ulster). After her husband's death in 1772, she took charge of his refugee Munsees at what became known as Queen Esther's Town: seventy log and plank houses, with five miles of cornfields, orchards, and pasture lands opposite Tioga Point, between West Athens and Milan. She was by nature peaceable. She protected settlers at the beginning of the Revolutionary War, and treated the Strobe family, her prisoners, with great kindness. It is debatable whether it was she or another Indian woman who killed the prisoners taken in the Battle of Wyoming. Tradition assigns her that role, but Jane Strobe (Mrs. Whittaker, whose "Narrative" has been published) did not think Queen Esther was at Wyoming at the time. Being warned of the approach of Colonel Hartley's raiders in the fall of 1778, she took her people with their livestock into hiding, possibly in the ravine still known as Esther's Glen. After the war she is said to have married a Tuscarora chief named Steel Trap and to have moved north with him to Cayuga Lake.

FRENCH MARGARET. A daughter (*Schwesterkind* or "sister's daughter," i.e., niece in the European sense) of Madame Montour. Margaret was born sometime between 1700 and 1705. She married a Mohawk chief named Peter Quebec (Katarionecha). For a time she lived in the Ohio country, but after 1745 her home was at the mouth of Lycoming Creek on the site of present Williamsport. She had great influence with her people and kept her town "dry." About 1756 (during

the French and Indian War) she and her husband moved north to the Chemung River, settling at Assinink at or near present Painted Post, where her son-in-law Eghohowin was chief. Here she concealed English prisoners and helped them to escape. Among her children were a son Nicholas Quebec and several daughters: Mary (Molly), Catharine, and (if tradition is correct) "Queen" Esther.

GAUSTARAX (OSCOTAX, "MUD EATER"). Seneca chief at Geneseo; a man of great influence in the Indian world but little known among white men. For years he headed the Genesee River division of the Senecas, which was anti-League and anti-English. Although he signed the Six Nations release to Pennsylvania of the Susquehanna lands in 1736 and of lands north of the Kittatinny Mountains in 1749, he bitterly opposed the encroachments of the settlers on unpurchased Indian lands and inspired a policy that for many years kept the Genesee-Allegheny region closed to white men. It was probably Gaustarax, not Guyasuta, who led the Indian forces against Colonel Bouquet at the Battle of Bushy Run in 1763.

GLICKHICAN. Famous Munsee warrior (his name means "Gun Sight") and principal adviser to Packanke, head chief of the Munsee Delawares. In 1769 he was sent to drive the Moravians from their new mission at Lawunakhannek (East Hickory) on the upper Allegheny. After hearing David Zeisberger preach, however, Glickhican decided to become a Christian. He was baptized under the name of Isaac on Christmas Eve, 1770, and soon became a "National Helper" or Native Elder. He arranged for the establishment of Moravian towns in the heart of the Delaware nation, first at what is now Moravia on the Beaver River and later at Schönbrunn and Gnadenhütten on the Tuscarawas. During the Revolutionary War he on several occasions persuaded hostile war parties to return without striking their intended blow at American settlements. On March 8, 1782, he was among the ninety Christian Indians killed by Pennsylvania and Virginia militia at Gnadenhütten.

GUYASUTA (KIASUTHA). A Seneca chief of the Wolf Clan, born about 1720 among the Genesee River Senecas. His name, Ki-ä'-sut-ha, means "Crosses Standing in a Row." His sister was Cornplanter's mother. All his life, although he was not a hereditary chief, he exerted vast influence among his own people and among the whites. He was for many years the League deputy or "half king" on the Allegheny-Ohio. "Able, prudent, and wise," as Merle Deardorff of Warren describes him, he tried to adjust peacefully the differences that arose between Indians and white men. He tried to prevent Pontiac's War. He did not, as commonly supposed, lead the Indians (though he may have been present) at the Battle of Bushy Run, 1763. Without being disloyal to his own people, he greatly helped Colonel Bouquet at the conference in 1764 that ended hostilities. In 1776 the Americans offered him a colonel's commission. When in 1777 the Senecas entered the war on the British side, he accepted his people's decision but did not take a very active part. It was not he but Farmer's Brother who led the Senecas in the destruction of Hannastown in 1782. After the war he worked with Cornplanter for friendly relations with the United States. He died, 1794, in Cornplanter's house and was buried on the Cornplanter Grant.

HALF KING. The term Half King was sometimes used by white men on the frontier to designate a deputy or vicergerent appointed by the Iroquois to supervise alien Indians living on lands to which the Iroquois claimed title by right of conquest. Tanacharison from about 1747 to his death in 1754 was the Half King at the Forks of the Ohio. He had supervision of the Delawares in the Allegheny-Ohio country, while Scaroyady, who shared authority with him, kept an eye on the Shawnees and succeeded to the title after his death. Shickellamy had similar authority from about 1728 to 1748 over Shawnees, Delawares, and other Indians in eastern Pennsylvania. Guyasuta later exercised the same responsibilities in the

Allegheny-Ohio country. He was followed by Cornplanter and afterwards by Cornplanter's nephew, Governor Blacksnake.

HANDSOME LAKE (SKANIADARIYO). A Seneca chief of the Turtle Clan, half brother of Cornplanter. In 1799 and 1800 on the Cornplanter Grant in Warren County, during the course of a long illness, he had a series of visions. In these, messengers from the Creator appeared to him. They led him up the Sky Path, showed him the punishments of the wicked and the rewards of the righteous. They transmitted to him *Gaiwio*, the Good Word from the Creator, and told him how to save his people from the evils that threatened their national existence. The movement he initiated, known as the "New Religion," and the practical solutions he proposed for his people's problems contributed much to the Iroquois renaissance in the nineteenth century. Today his sayings, "The Code of Handsome Lake," are devoutly preserved by his followers, who constitute a large part of the Iroquois in the United States and Canada. Most of his work was accomplished at Cornplanter's Town, Cold Spring, and Tonawanda. He died on a visit to Onondaga, August 10, 1815.

JACOBS, CAPTAIN. A noted Delaware war chief. He took part in the Battle of the Monongahela in 1755 and helped to rout Braddock's army. He joined Shingas in raids against Pennsylvania and Virginia settlements. For this a price of \$350 was put on each chief's head. In July and August, 1756, Captain Jacobs and his Indians joined a French force under Coulon de Villiers in the capture of Fort Granville (near Lewistown) on the Juniata. He was killed at Kittanning, September 8, 1756, by forces under Colonel John Armstrong who had surprised the town.

KAKOWATCHIKY. A Shawnee chief of the Pequea division. It is possible that it was he who led the Shawnees from the Illinois country to the upper Delaware in 1694. Certainly he was chief of the Shawnees at the Pechoquealin towns above the Delaware Water Gap as early as 1709. About 1728 he moved with his band to the Shawnee Flats on the North Branch of the Susquehanna (just below the present town of Plymouth), the general area being known then as Wyoming. There Conrad Weiser and Count Zinzendorf visited him in 1742. About 1744 he moved with his band to Logstown on the Ohio, where Conrad Weiser met him in 1748. John Patton found him bedridden at Logstown in 1752.

KILLBUCK (GELELEMEND). After the death of White Eyes in 1778 and during the minority of the hereditary chief, Killbuck (Gelelemend), a son of Captain Killbuck (Bemineo), was installed as temporary chief of the Delaware nation, whose headquarters were then on the Muskingum River. During the Revolution he led the pro-American party among the Delawares. In 1781 he accepted an invitation to come under the protection of the United States at Pittsburgh and lived with other Delawares on Killbuck's Island. There they were attacked by militia returning from the murder of the Christian Indians at Gnadenhütten. Killbuck escaped by swimming, but he left behind the tribal wampum bag (containing records from the time of William Penn), which was never recovered. After the war he resigned his chiefship to live with the Moravians. He was baptized and named William Henry after Judge William Henry, a member of the Continental Congress. He died in 1811.

KISHACOQUILLAS. A Shawnee chief living at Ohesson or Kishacoquillas' Town (Lewistown) on the Juniata. He was reported in 1731 to be chief man of that town, which then contained twenty Shawnee families and sixty warriors. In 1739, on behalf of "the Shawnee nation," he signed a treaty of friendship with Pennsylvania, to last "while the Sun, Moon, and Stars endure." He died at Captain McKee's, August, 1754. His death was formally "condoled" by Conrad Weiser at Aughwick (Shirleysburg) a few days later.

LAPACHPETON. A Unami Delaware, described by Conrad Weiser as "an Honest true hearted man." He was at one time chief of the village of Hockendaqua, situated on the Lehigh River a few miles north of the present Allentown. Later he moved to Catawissa (Lapachpeton's Town) on the North Branch of the Susquehanna. On the death of Sassoonan (Olumapies) in 1747, he declined appointment as head chief of the Delaware nation lest he be envied and bewitched by his detractors. He was a friend of the English. In 1732 he signed with his mark the release to Pennsylvania of lands between the Lehigh Hills and the Kittatinny Mountains extending west from the Delaware River to the heads of streams flowing into the Susquehanna. During the French and Indian War, he opposed Teedyuscung at the Easton conference of 1757, demanding that peace be made with Pennsylvania.

LOGAN (TACHNECHDORUS). John, son of Shickellamy (the Iroquois viceroy at Shamokin) was one of the ten Cayuga sachems or council chiefs of the Iroquois. He came to be known as "John Logan" through false analogy with the name of his younger brother "James Logan," and then simply as "Logan." Like his father, he was a friend of the English. He helped Pennsylvania make the Albany Purchase of 1754. Some of his people were killed by the Paxton Boys at Conestoga in 1763, but he took no revenge. When, however, in 1774 Daniel Greathouse's men murdered thirteen members of his family at Yellow Creek on the Ohio, Logan helped to bring on the Shawnee War (Lord Dunmore's War). At the Battle of Mount Pleasant, he is said to have taken thirteen scalps. His message to Lord Dunmore at the close of the war, dictated to Simon Girty, put on paper by John Gibson, and transmitted to the public by Thomas Jefferson, has become famous as "Logan's Lament." David McClure described him in 1772 as "the most martial figure of an Indian that I had ever seen." John Heckewelder called him "a man of superior talents but of deep Melancholy," to whom life "had become a torment." The tradition that he was murdered by white men is mistaken. On orders from some of the elders among his own people, he was killed about 1786 by his nephew, who explained afterwards to John Adlum that Logan had become presumptuous, "too great a man to live," and that he, the nephew, expected to inherit Logan's greatness.

MONTOUR, MADAME. A woman of French and Indian descent, who did much to "brighten the chain of friendship" between the Iroquois and the English. Some of her Indian descendants in Pennsylvania preserved the name Montour, the French speech, and the manners of this distinguished matron of their lineage. She was reputed to be the daughter (born about 1684) of a governor of Canada and to have been taken prisoner by Iroquois warriors when she was about ten years old. There is evidence that she was brought up in the family of "Louis Couc surnommé Montour," whose home was at Three Rivers. Her first husband is said to have been a Seneca named Roland Montour. Her second is known to have been an Oneida chief, Carandowana or "Big Tree," who took the name of Robert Hunter in compliment to the governor of New York. In 1711 she was interpreter at a conference in Albany between the Iroquois and the governor of New York, and next year she used her influence to prevent the Iroquois from joining the Tuscaroras in the war against North Carolina. In 1727 she was "Interpretess" at a conference in Philadelphia between the Iroquois and Governor Patrick Gordon. She lived for a time in the west, but after 1727 her home was on the West Branch of the Susquehanna at Otstonwakin (Montoursville). Her last days were spent in the Allegheny-Ohio country, where she died about 1752. Several of her children attained distinction, especially Andrew and Margaret.

MONTOUR, ANDREW (SATTELIHU). Andrew, a son of Madame Montour, was one of the most picturesque figures in colonial Pennsylvania. Count Zinzendorf wrote in 1742: "Andrew's cast of countenance is decidedly European, and had not his face been encircled with a broad band of paint, applied with bear's fat, I

would certainly have taken him for one." He served as interpreter at many Indian conferences, having a good knowledge of Iroquoian as well as Algonkian tongues. His influence, especially over the Ohio Indians, was so great that the French put a price on his head. He accompanied Conrad Weiser to Onondaga in 1745 and to Logstown in 1748. With George Croghan he made many journeys into the Ohio country and accompanied William Trent to Pickawillany in 1752. During the French and Indian War and Pontiac's War, he led Indians in the British service. He organized a company of Indian scouts for Washington in 1754 and was in the battle for Fort Necessity. In 1755 he was with Braddock at the Monongahela. For his services to Pennsylvania as soldier, interpreter, and Indian agent he received several grants of land. For some years after 1752 his home was on Montour Creek near its junction with Sherman Creek, about twelve miles northwest of Carlisle. He died in 1772.

NETAWATWEES ("KING" NEWCOMER). A Unami Delaware, said to have been born about 1678 in eastern Pennsylvania and in his youth to have known William Penn. He was one of the signers of the Treaty of Conestoga, 1718. In 1737 he was reported to be at Allegania in the Ohio country. Some time after the death of Sassoonan (Olumapies), he became chief of the Unami division, head chief of the Delaware nation, and keeper of the wampum and other records. "It was with this chief," wrote John Heckewelder, "that I saw at different times the speeches of William Penn and his successors." By his wise and conciliatory policy he brought about a renaissance of the Delaware nation. In 1757 he encouraged Teedyuscung to make peace with the English. In 1770 he founded Gekelemuk-*pechink* (Newcomerstown) as his capital, moving it to Goschachking (Coshocton) in 1776. In 1772 he invited the Moravians to establish towns among his people, and he set aside for them some thirty miles along the Tuscarawas River. He encouraged his people to join them, and during the last summer of his life he came every Sunday to hear the Christian service. He died in Pittsburgh, October 31, 1776, and was succeeded by Captain White Eyes.

NEWALLIKE (NEOLEGAN, "THE FOUR STEPS"). A Munsee chief from the Minisinks who, as pressure from white men increased, moved from the Delaware Valley to Tunkhannock Creek, then to the North Branch of the Susquehanna at Sheshequin, thence to the West Branch, later to the Muskingum, and at last to Sandusky. In 1766 he was sent by the Six Nations to notify the Indians living on the Susquehanna that certain bands of Tuscaroras and Nanticokes were moving north toward the Iroquois homeland and to request that food and transportation be made ready for them. For some years he was chief at the Big Island (Lock Haven). In 1774 he moved with all his family to the Moravian mission town of Schönbrunn on the Tuscarawas branch of the Muskingum. There he built a house, and on May 12, 1774, was baptized. The Revolutionary War disturbed him, and in February, 1777, he renounced the Moravians and joined the pro-British party among the Delawares.

NUTIMUS (NOOTAMIS). A Delaware chief, originally from New Jersey. When his grandfather in Pennsylvania died, he took up residence on ancestral land between Tohiccon Creek and the Lehigh River. He was a good blacksmith and a famous Indian doctor, reputed to have cured his daughter of madness induced by the bite of a mad dog and to have saved the life of the poet William Satterthwaite who was bitten by a rattlesnake. From 1734 to 1737 he was involved in altercations with the Penns over land encroachments. In 1737 he signed the confirmation deed for the Walking Purchase, but protested the manner in which the walk was performed. When the Six Nations rejected his protest, he crossed the mountains to the North Branch of the Susquehanna and settled at Nutimus Town, west of present Nescopeck. There he lived in a large house with his five married sons and their families and five Negro servants. He was a friend of the English. When the

French and Indian War broke out, he moved north to the neighborhood of Passigachkunk (Canisteo, N. Y.). At the time of Pontiac's War, he moved to the Big Island (Lock Haven) on the West Branch of the Susquehanna. Stories of his later residence and death in the Ohio country involve confusion between "Old King Nutimus" and his son Isaac Nutimus.

OLUMAPIES (ALLUMAPEES). *See* SASSOONAN.

OPESSAH. Chief of the band of Shawnees who came up from Maryland about 1697 and settled at Pequea in what is now Lancaster County. He represented his people at the treaty held by William Penn at Philadelphia in April, 1701, with the Five Nations, Susquehannocks, Conoys, and Shawnees. In 1707 he received a visit at Pequea from Governor John Evans. In 1711 he gave up his chieftainship (for what cause is not known), left Pequea, and made his home at Paxtang. In 1722 he returned to Maryland, settling at Opessah's Town (Oldtown).

PAPOONHANK (MINSI JOHN). A Munsee Delaware prophet, born about 1705, who in 1758 established a village at Wyalusing. There he preached a fervent nativism, urging his people to keep the ancient Indian ways and reject the white man's culture. Influenced by Quakers and Moravians (he attended Moravian services at Nain and Bethlehem in 1759), he turned to Christianity. During Pontiac's War he conducted twenty-one Moravian Indians to Philadelphia for safety. In 1765 he gave land at Wyalusing to the Moravians for the establishment of the mission of Friedenshütten, which became a model for subsequent Moravian Indian towns. In 1772 he moved with this Moravian colony to the Tuscarawas River, being speaker for the embassy sent to announce their arrival before the chiefs' council at New-comer's Town. He died in May, 1775.

PAXINOSA. A Shawnee born in the Ohio country. When the Shawnees in the Wyoming Valley broke up, 1743-1744, the greater part of them going out to the Ohio, Paxinosa succeeded Kakowatchiky as chief of the Wyoming Shawnees. He was a strong friend of the English. In 1756, soon after the outbreak of the French and Indian War, he moved north with his band to Tioga (Athens, Pa.). He attended the Easton Conference of 1757, bringing with him a company of fifty-seven Indians. About 1758 he moved up to Passigachkunk (Canisteo, N. Y.), and in the spring of 1760 went on with his family to the Ohio. In 1770 "Puckshenose's" town was on the upper Scioto.

PIPE, CAPTAIN (HOPOCAN, "TOBACCO PIPE"). A Delaware Indian, hereditary sachem and head chief of the Munsee division, who temporarily relinquished his civil function to serve as war chief. John Heckewelder described him as "an artful, ambitious man, yet not deficient in greatness of mind." George Croghan thought him "a sober, sensible Indian." In 1763 at the outbreak of Pontiac's War, he was captured while attempting to take Fort Pitt by stratagem. During the Revolution, he headed the pro-British party among the Delawares. In 1781 he removed the Moravian missionaries from the Tuscarawas River to Upper Sandusky. When, however, they were put on trial by the British at Detroit, Captain Pipe defended them and got them released. After the Battle of Upper Sandusky, 1782, Pipe permitted the torture of Colonel William Crawford, who had been out on the Squaw Campaign in which Pipe's mother was wounded and his brother killed. After the war Pipe advised the western tribes to maintain friendly relations with the United States.

SASSOONAN (OLUMAPIES, "KEEPER OF THE WAMPUM RECORDS"). A Unami Delaware, head chief of his people. His early home was on the Schuylkill, but in 1709 (when he attended a conference with Governor Gookin at Philadelphia) he was reported to be living at Paxtang (Harrisburg). In 1712 he headed a

delegation of Delawares who showed Governor Gookin the wampum "tribute" they were taking north to their Uncles, the Iroquois. About 1718, after signing a release in that year to the Penns for "the land situated between the rivers Delaware and Susquehannah, from Duck Creek to the mountains on this side of Lechay," Sassoonan moved to Shamokin (Sunbury). In 1743 he assisted Shickellamy, the Iroquois vicegerent, in arresting Mushemcelin, a Delaware Indian accused of murdering the trader Jack Armstrong. In his last years he was often intoxicated. While in that condition, he stabbed to death Shackatawlin, who had been expected to succeed him as chief. He himself died at Shamokin in 1747. After his death the Delawares were without a head chief until 1752, when the Iroquois Half King on the Ohio appointed Shingas to represent them.

SCAROYADY (MONACATOOTIIA). A famous Oneida warrior who, according to his own pictographic "memoir," had fought in thirty-one engagements, killed seven warriors, and taken eleven prisoners. About 1747 he was appointed by the Iroquois Confederacy to supervise the Shawnees at the Forks of the Ohio. On the death of Tanacharison in 1754, he succeeded him as "half king" with general "Direction of Indian Affairs," as Richard Peters wrote, in the west. At Logstown Conrad Weiser met him in 1748, and George Washington met him there in 1753. After Washington's defeat at Fort Necessity in 1754, Scaroyady moved to Aughwick to escape the French. In that year he journeyed to Onondaga to protest the so-called Wyoming Purchase. A strong friend of the English, he campaigned with Washington and Braddock. In the months that followed Braddock's defeat, he tried to enlist Pennsylvania's military aid for the Delawares living on the Susquehanna, who were under pressure from the French to take up the hatchet against the English. "You can't live in the woods and stay neutral," he said. On behalf of the province, he made a dangerous journey through the Delaware country to find out just what the situation was. As a result of his report on the widespread hostility, the Pennsylvania Assembly declared war on the Delawares. He died at Lancaster in 1757.

SHICKELLAMY (SWATANEY, "OUR ENLIGHTENER"). His father was probably French, but his mother was a Cayuga, and in Indian fashion he took his nationality from her. When he was about two years old he was taken captive by the Oneidas and brought up among them. Recognized at maturity to be a man of strong character and statesmanlike vision, he was sent about 1728 by the Iroquois Confederacy to the Forks of the Susquehanna to be their vicegerent or administrator of their colonial policy. For many years Shickellamy was Pennsylvania's principal channel of negotiations with the Indians on her borders. He attended conferences with the governor and council in Philadelphia, conferred with Conrad Weiser at his home (now the Conrad Weiser Memorial Park at Womelsdorf), and accompanied Weiser on important journeys to the Iroquois capital at Onondaga (Syracuse, N. Y.). He died at Shamokin, 1748. He had four sons: Aralipot ("unhappy" Jake), Tachnechdorus (John Shickellamy, in later years known as Logan), Tahgahjute (James Logan), and John "Petty" (*Petit*).

SHINGAS ("BOG MEADOW"). Nephew of Sassoonan and brother of Tamaqua, the Beaver. He lived in his youth on the upper Schuylkill River, but after the sale of the Tulpehocken lands in 1732 he went to the Ohio country. In 1737 he was at Chartier's Town, in 1748 at Logstown, in 1753 at McKee's Rocks (at the mouth of Chartier's Creek on the Ohio River), and in 1762 at Tuscarawas in the Muskingum country. After the death of Sassoonan (Olumapies, the Wampum Keeper), there was for five years no acknowledged head chief of the Delawares; but in 1752 Tanacharison, the Iroquois Half King, appointed Shingas "king" to fill the vacancy. He retained that position until 1758, when the Delawares deposed him and appointed his brother, the Beaver, in his place. One reason for this change was that the career of Shingas during the French and Indian War had made him *persona non grata* with the English. On October 31, 1755, a war party which he led

destroyed the Great Cove. He created such havoc in the Conococheague Valley, Shermans Valley, and other frontier settlements that he has been remembered as "Shingas the Terrible." At one time the government of Pennsylvania offered 350 dollars for his head. John Heckewelder, who knew him well at Tuscarawas, called him "the greatest Delaware warrior of that time." Yet he was magnanimous. James Kenny in 1762 wrote ". . . its generally said by ye White people that he shows them the Most Kindness & generossity of all ye Indians thereabouts." He died during the winter of 1763-1764.

TAMANEND ("THE AFFABLE"). Head chief of the Delawares. William Penn bought several tracts of land from him and his associates June 23, 1683. That may have been the transaction which gave rise to the legend of the Great Treaty under the Shackamaxon Elm at Philadelphia—the treaty pictured by Benjamin West and to which Voltaire alluded as the only treaty with the Indians "never sworn to and never broken." Little is known with certainty of his career. Even the date of his death has been variously estimated as "before 1701" or at the age of ninety-seven in 1750. But he has left an imposing legend behind him. John Heckewelder wrote: "The name of Tamanend is held in the highest veneration among the Indians. Of all the chiefs and great men which the Lenape nation ever had, he stands foremost on the list. . . . The fame of this great man extended even among the whites. . . . In the Revolutionary War his enthusiastic admirers dubbed him a saint, and he was established under the name of St. Tammany, the Patron Saint of America." His memory is still preserved in the name of the town Tamanend in Schuylkill County. In 1772 a secret society, the Sons of King Tammany, forerunner of the Improved Order of Red Men, was named for him. So also was the Society of St. Tammany (1789), forerunner of Tammany Hall.

TANACHARISON, THE HALF KING. A Seneca chief, born about 1700. He was sent by the Iroquois about 1747 to the Forks of the Ohio as their vicegerent, with authority especially over the Delawares, Scaroyady being given authority over the Shawnees. In 1748 Conrad Weiser conferred with him at Logstown. When in 1753 the French built Fort Presque Isle (Erie) and Fort Le Boeuf (Waterford), he sent three successive messages (the strongest Iroquois protest short of a declaration of war), calling on the French to remove their military forces from Iroquois territory. In December of that year he accompanied Washington to Fort Le Boeuf with a similar summons from Virginia. These efforts to stop the French failing, he invited Virginia to build a fort at the Forks. He was present, April 17, 1754, when that fort, half finished, was surrendered to the French. Before sunrise on the morning of May 28 he conferred with George Washington at the Half King's Rock (near Summit, east of Uniontown). With his warriors about three hours later, he supported Washington in the skirmish at Jumonville Rocks, an incident which set off the French and Indian War. Against Tanacharison's advice, Washington erected palisades (Fort Necessity) at the Great Meadows, which he was soon obliged to surrender. After this disaster, the Half King moved his headquarters east to Aughwick. He died October 4, 1754.

TEEDYUSCUNG. A Delaware "king." He was not of chiefly lineage, but because of his unusual abilities and influence among the Indians in the Susquehanna Valley he became known among white men as "King of the Delawares." He was born about 1700 in New Jersey near Trenton, the son of Old Captain Harris. He earned a small living as a broommaker, living on the edge of the white settlement. About 1730 he moved to the Forks of the Delaware (the land in the angle between the Delaware and Lehigh rivers). He protested the Walking Purchase, by which this land was alienated from the Indians in 1737. Joining the Moravians at Gnadenhütten (Lehighton), he was baptized in 1750 under the name of Gideon. In 1753, at the invitation of the Iroquois, he led a band of Delawares to Wyoming (Wilkes-Barre). During the French and Indian War he and his warriors attacked

Pennsylvania settlements. He took part, however, in peace conferences at Easton in 1756, 1757, and 1758, claiming at one time to speak for eighteen nations. At the Easton Conference of 1758 the Iroquois put him in his place by making peace with the English on behalf of the Delawares over his head. After the war the Iroquois appointed him their agent at Wyoming with instructions to keep the valley free of encroachments by white men. When the Susquehannah Company of Connecticut sent 119 armed men in 1762 to occupy the valley, Teedyuscung warned them off. Next year (1763) on April 19 he was burned to death in his cabin.

WHITE EYES, CAPTAIN (COQUETHAGECHTON). After the death of Neta-watwees in 1776, White Eyes became the acting head chief of the Delawares until, as John Heckewelder wrote, "the young chief by lineal descent should be of proper age to superintend the councils." When Post and Heckewelder met White Eyes in 1762, he was living at the mouth of Beaver Creek. By 1770 his home was at the Delaware capital Gekelemukpechink (Newcomerstown) on the Tuscarawas River, where he was Netawatwees' first counselor. Though in his youth a warrior, he became a strong advocate of peace and in 1774 tried to dissuade the Shawnees from embarking on Lord Dunmore's War. He encouraged the missionary work of the Moravians, believing that they offered the best solution of the race problem. When the Revolutionary War broke out, he headed the pro-American party among his people and kept the Delawares neutral (in line with early American policy) for three years. In 1778 he accepted appointment as colonel in the American army and joined General Lachlan McIntosh on an expedition into the Indian country with Detroit as its objective. He died November 10, 1778, before they reached the Tuscarawas River. It was rumored that he died of smallpox. George Morgan, Indian agent for the United States at the time, alleged that he had been killed by some of the militia.

Bibliography

GENERAL REFERENCE

- Hodge, Frederick Webb, ed. *Handbook of the American Indians North of Mexico* (Bulletin 30, Bureau of American Ethnology, Smithsonian Institution, Washington, D. C., 1910). Two encyclopedic volumes which, though out of date in some particulars, remain the standard work of reference in their field.
- Donehoo, George P. *Indian Villages and Place Names in Pennsylvania* (Harrisburg, 1928). Despite the advance of Indian studies since 1928, this book remains on the whole a handy and valuable work of reference.
- Collier, John. *Indians of the Americas* (New York, 1947). Brilliant brief characterizations of various Indian cultures in North and South America. A paperback edition, somewhat abridged, is now available.
- Underhill, Ruth. *Red Man's America* (Chicago, 1952). A good introduction to the study of Indian cultures in their historic setting.

HISTORY

- Downes, Randolph C. *Council Fires on the Upper Ohio* (Pittsburgh, 1940). As announced in the subtitle, this is "A Narrative of Indian Affairs on the Upper Ohio Valley until 1795."
- Hunt, George T. *The Wars of the Iroquois: A Study in Intertribal Trade Relations* (Madison, Wis., 1960). Reprint of a book first published in 1940. Despite its somewhat dated over-emphasis on economic motivations, it remains the best history available of the Beaver Wars of the seventeenth century.
- Wainwright, Nicholas B. *George Croghan, Wilderness Diplomat* (Chapel Hill, 1959). A detailed and discriminating study of Pennsylvania's foremost Indian trader and his influence among the Indians of the Ohio country.
- Wallace, Anthony F. C. *King of the Delawares, Teedyuscung* (Philadelphia, 1949). A biography of the most prominent Delaware Indian of the mid-eighteenth century, with a background study of Delaware social and political organization.
- Wallace, Paul A. W. *Conrad Weiser, Friend of Colonist and Mohawk* (Philadelphia, 1945). A narrative study, through the career of Pennsylvania's Indian ambassador, of the Province's Indian policy and the men who administered it from 1732 to 1760.
- _____, ed. *Thirty Thousand Miles with John Heckewelder* (Pittsburgh, 1950). A Moravian missionary's journals of travel among the Delaware and Mahican Indians, with extracts from the best of his *History, Manners, and Customs of the Indian Nations Who Once Inhabited Pennsylvania and the Neighbouring States*.

DELAWARES

- Gray, Elma E. *Wilderness Christians* (Ithaca, N. Y., 1956). A study of Moravian missionaries and their work among the Delaware and Mahican Indians in Pennsylvania, Ohio, Michigan, and Ontario.
- Harrington, Mark R. *Religion and Ceremonies of the Lenape* (New York, 1921). A scholarly account of Delaware religious rites.

Newcomb, William W., Jr. *The Culture and Acculturation of the Delaware Indians* (Ann Arbor, 1956). A scientific study of old Delaware customs and beliefs, and the changes that have occurred during the process of assimilation.

Speck, Frank G. *The Celestial Bear Comes Down to Earth* (Reading Public Museum and Art Gallery, Scientific Publications No. 7, Reading, Pa., 1945). A study of the Delawares' Big House Ceremony, its history, rites, and symbolism.

Tantaquidgeon, Gladys. *A Study of Delaware Indian Medicine Practice and Folk Beliefs* (Harrisburg, 1942). Based on information given by Witapanoxwe, "Walks with Daylight," a Delaware Indian of Oklahoma.

IROQUOIS

Beauchamp, William M. *Civil, Religious & Mourning Councils and Ceremonies of Adoption of the New York Indians* (New York State Museum Bulletin 113, Albany, N. Y., 1906). Texts of ritual songs in both Mohawk and English, with descriptions of the ceremonies of which they were a part.

Deardorff, Merle E. "The Religion of Handsome Lake: Its Origin and Development," *Symposium on Local Diversity in Iroquois Culture* (Smithsonian Institution, Washington, D. C., 1951). A profound and discriminating account of the Seneca Prophet and his contribution to the Iroquois renaissance in the nineteenth century.

Fadden, Ray. "The Visions of Handsome Lake," *Pennsylvania History*, XXII, No. 4 (October, 1955), 341-53. A Mohawk follower of Handsome Lake's "New Religion" describes the Prophet's visions and his "Good Words" as they are transmitted today in Iroquois Longhouses.

Morgan, Lewis H. *League of the Ho-De-No-Sau-Nee or Iroquois* (New York, 1904). A well-annotated reprint of Morgan's classic, originally published in 1851, which ranks as the first scientific study of an Indian tribe. Morgan was over-quick in reading European meanings into Iroquois institutions. Nevertheless this product of direct observation with the aid of good Indian informants at a time when Iroquois culture was still vital, provides a valuable record of Iroquois customs and the organization and spirit of the League.

Wallace, Paul A. W. *The White Roots of Peace* (Philadelphia, 1946). The foundation legend of the Five Nations (Iroquois). Based on original sources.

Wilson, Edmund. *Apologies to the Iroquois* (Philadelphia, 1959). One of America's foremost writers describes the Iroquois as they appear today.

SHAWNEES

Drake, Florence. *Civilization as Told to Florence Drake by Thomas Wildcat Alford* (Norman, Oklahoma, 1936). An intimate account of Shawnee customs and beliefs.

INDIAN LIFE

Bleeker, Sonia. *The Delaware Indians: Eastern Fishermen and Farmers* (New York, 1953). A sound and attractive picture of daily life among the Delawares.

———. *Indians of the Longhouse. The Story of the Iroquois* (New York, 1950). Daily life in an Iroquois village during the four seasons.

- Harrington, Mark R. *The Indians of New Jersey: Dickon Among the Lenapes* (New Brunswick, N. J., 1963). A reprint of the author's *Dickon Among the Lenape Indians*, in which a ripe scholar presents in fictional form for young readers a picture of Delaware Indian customs about 1600.
- Joseph, Alvin H., Jr., ed. *The American Heritage Book of Indians* (New York, 1961). Excellent pictures, many of them rare and of high documentary value. The text, though somewhat hastily put together, is full, up to date, and discriminating.
- Richter, Conrad. *The Light in the Forest* (New York, 1953). A fictional but psychologically sound interpretation of the tensions that embittered Indian-white relations in mid-eighteenth century Pennsylvania.
- Stirling, Matthew W. *Indians of the Americas* (National Geographic Society, Washington, D. C., 1955). The paintings of W. Langdon Kihn and H. M. Herget, depicting scenes of Indian life, are reproduced in color. They are accompanied by a rapid historical description of Indian cultures on two continents.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Fenton, William N. *American Indian and White Relations to 1820* (Chapel Hill, 1957). An introductory article entitled "Indian and White Relations in Eastern North America," by Dr. Fenton is followed by a selective bibliography by L. H. Butterfield, Wilcomb E. Washburn, and William N. Fenton.

Index

- Abeel, John; *see* Cornplanter
 Abraham, Mahican Indian, 154
 Adlum, John, 175
 Aehkolunty, Delaware Indian, 111
 Afterlife, Indian view of, 68-69, 73-74
 Agriculture, 5-6, 13, 25-27, 31, 35, 91, 96, 117
 Albany, N. Y., 89, 96-97, 100, 102, 110-11, 135, 155, 170, 175
 Albany Purchase, 132, 139, 175
 Alcor, 67
 Alexander, Hartley Burr, 7, 71, 75
 Alford, Thomas Wildcat, 32, 116, 119-20
 Algonkian linguistic stock, 16, 28, 44, 50, 67, 69, 108, 115
 Algonquin Indians, 92
 Allegheny Mountains, 13, 40-41, 43, 45, 145
 Allegheny Path, 43-44, 138
 Allegheny River, 8, 13, 39-40, 43, 45, 96, 103, 105, 113-14, 124, 138, 142, 144-46, 148, 165, 171-80
 Alleghenyville, 152
 Allentown, Pa., 175
 Alliquippa, Queen, Seneca Indian, biographical sketch of, 171
 Allumapees; *see* Sassoonan
 Alsop, George, 10
 Ambassadors' Road, 86
 Ambridge, Pa., 123
 American Revolution, 87, 153, 157-69, 171-74, 176, 179-80
 Amherst, Gen. Jeffery, 149-51
 Amusements, 77-83
 Andastes, 11; *see also* Susquehannock Indians
 Antis's Mill, 160
 Appalachian Mountains, 40
 Appalachian Trail, 43
 Arahpot; *see* Shickellamy, Jake
 Armstrong, Jack, 22
 Armstrong, Col. John, 147-48, 174, 178
 Arrows, game with, 80; poisoned, 15; Susquehannock, 10
 Assinink, 173
 Athens, Pa., 12, 123, 162, 177
 Atotarho, head chief of the Iroquois, 86, 90
 Attaock, 11
 Aughwick, Pa., 171, 174, 178-79
 Augusta, Fort, 148, 159
 Avery's Trace, 44
 Avon, N. Y., 172
 Bacon, Nathaniel, 112
 Bainbridge, Pa, 108
 Bald Eagle (Woapalanne), Delaware Indian, biographical sketch of, 171
 Bald Eagle Creek, 160, 171
 Bald Eagle Mountain, 171
 Bald Eagle's Nest (Milesburg, Pa.), 171
 Bathing, 19-20, 119
 Beards, Indian, 20-21
 Beauharnois, Marquis de, 115
 Beaver (Tamaqua), Delaware chief, 57, 178; biographical sketch of, 171
 Beaver River, 8, 143, 148, 171, 173, 180
 Beaver Wars, 12, 95-103, 170
 Bedford, Pa., 40-41, 124
 Bedford, Fort, 150
 Beehive house, 28
 Bethlehem, Pa., 153, 177
 Beverley, Robert, 32
 Beverwyck; *see* Orange, Fort
 Bezaillon, Peter, 108
 Big House Ceremony, 22, 66-68, 73, 78, 81, 83, 169
 Big Island (Lock Haven, Pa.), 176-77; *see also* Great Island
 Big Tree (Carandowana), Oneida chief, 175
 Binghamton, N. Y., 108
 Birth, 58-59
 Blacksnake, Governor, Seneca Indian, 174
 Blanket, 19, 21
 Blood money, 31, 51
 Blue Mountain, 41, 142
 Blue Rock Ford, 11
 Bolivar, Ohio, 171
 Bouquet, Col. Henry, 161, 171; and Battle of Bushy Run, 150-51
 Bow and arrow, 5, 9, 30
 Boyd, Sergeant, 162
 Braddock, Gen. Edward, defeat of, 145, 148, 174, 176, 178
 Brady, James, 171
 Brady, Capt. John, 160
 Brady, Samuel, 171
 Brady's Bend, 171
 Brandywine Creek, 127, 134, 138
 Brandywine Indians, 53
 Brant, Joseph, Mohawk chief, 160-61
 Brantford, Ont., 169
 Brodhead, Col. Daniel, 162-63
 Bucktooth (West Salamanca, N. Y.), 163

- Buffalo, N. Y., 15
 Buffalo settlement, Pa., 160
 Bull, Captain, Delaware Indian, 156-57
 Burgoyne, Gen. John, 160
 Burial rites, 62
 Burnt Cabins, Pa., 132
 Burnt House; *see* Cornplanter's Town
 Burnt Offering Ceremony, 59, 64, 72
 Bushy Run, Battle of, 150-51, 161, 173
 Butler, Col. John, 161
 Butler, Col. Zehulon, 161
 Butler's Rangers, 161

 Cabin, wayside, 28
 Cabot, John, 18, 128
 Caddo Indians, 169
 Calumet, 72, 82
 Calvert, Pa., 109
 Campbell, Thomas, 160
 Campbell's Ledge, 160
 Camping, 34, 44, 120-21
 Canadesaga (Seneca Castle), 161, 163
 Canadochly Creek, 11, 107
 Canandaigua, N. Y., 163-64
 Canasatego, Onondaga chief, 153; biographical sketch of, 171
 Canienga, 11; *see also* Mohawk Indians
 Canisteo, N. Y., 177
 Cannibalism, 118-19
 Canoes, 40, 44-45
 "Canoe Place," 45
 Captivities; *see* Indian captivities
 Carandowana; *see* Big Tree
 Carlisle, Pa., 150, 172, 176
 Carving, 14
 Cat Nation (Erichronon), 14-15; *see also* Erie Indians
 Catawba Indians, 88, 121, 142
 Catawba Path, 43
 Catawissa, Pa., 108, 175
 Catawissa Creek, 112
 Cayuga Indians, 86, 89, 98, 102, 113, 142, 158, 175, 178
 Cayuga Lake, 112, 172
 Céloron de Blainville, Louis-Jean-Baptiste, 123
 Cepowig, 11
Cha-lah-gaw-tha; *see* Chillicothe
 Champlain, Samuel de, 12, 37, 85
 Chartier, Martin, 122, 124
 Chartier, Peter, 124-25, 143; biographical sketch of, 172
 Chartier's Creek, 171, 178
 Chartier's Old Town, 35, 125
 Chartier's Town, 124, 178
 Chatham, Ont., 169
 Chemung River, 12, 163, 173
 Chenango, N. Y., 108-109, 123, 154; *see also* Otseningo
 Cherokee Indians, 43, 115, 121, 169
 Cherry Tree, Pa., 45
 Chesapeake Bay, 13, 96, 107, 109, 122, 133-34
 Chester Creek, 133-34
 Chiefs, 36, 73, 88-89, 164, 175, 180; among the Delawares, 51-52; among the Iroquois, 86-88; among the Nanticokes, 109; among the Shawnees, 116-17
 Chickasaw Indians, 121
 Chickasaw Path, 44
 Child care, 58-59
 Childbirth, 58
 Childhood, 59
 Chillicothe (Shawnee tribal division), 115
 Chillisquaque, 124, 160
 Chippewa Indians, 119, 121, 150; in Pontiac's War, 149
 Christian Island, Ont., 98
 Chugnut, 108
 Clans, 52, 55, 69
 Claus, Daniel, 160-61
 Cleanliness, 19-20
 Clinton, Gen. James, 48, 162
 Clothing, 9, 18-19; children's, 58-59
 Cochranville, Pa., 109
 Cold Spring, N. Y., 166, 174
 Collier, John, 88
 Colonialism, 128
 Columbus, Christopher, 140-41
 Compass, Pa., 109
 Concejohela, 107
 Conemaugh (Johnstown, Pa.), 124
 Conemaugh Old Town, 35
 Conemaugh Path, 41
 Conemaugh River, 172
 Conestoga Creek, 11
 Conestoga Indian Town, 11, 43, 100, 105, 111, 122, 131, 175; massacre at, 152-53; treaty at, 175
 Conestoga Indians, 12, 134
 Conestoga Manor, 11, 152
 Conewango (Warren, Pa.), 163
 Conjurors, 37, 39
 Connellsville, Pa., 43
 Conococheague Creek, 43, 146, 179
 Conodoguinet, Shawnee town, 124
 Conodoguinet Creek, 108, 124, 172
 Conoy Creek, 105, 107-108
 Conoy Indians, 16, 107-108, 114, 177
 Conoy Town, 107
 Conshohocken, Pa., 133, 159
 Cooking, 14, 31-35, 117; Delaware cleanliness in, 33
 Coquethagechton; *see* White Eyes
 Corn, Indian, 5, 13, 26, 33-35, 61, 71, 80, 96, 117, 120, 163, 167, 171
 Corn Mother, 31, 64
 Cornplanter, Seneca Indian, 87-88, 128,

- 164-66, 170, 172-74; biographical sketch of, 172
- Cornplanter Grant, 165-69, 172-74
- Cornplanter's Town, 163, 166, 172, 174
- Coshocton, Ohio, 176
- Couc, Louis; *see* Montour, Louis Couc
- Council Fires, 46, 51, 60-61, 72, 86-88, 108, 117, 155
- Courtship, 61, 80
- Crawford, Col. William, 159, 177; death of, 177
- Creation, Indian story of, 69-71; pictorial concept of, Frontispiece; Shawnee legend of, 116
- Creator, 38, 60, 64-69, 75, 79, 83, 90, 167-68, 174; Delaware description of, 64; Handsome Lake's message from, 166; *see also* Great Spirit
- Croghan, George, 149, 157, 176-77
- Crum Creek, 127
- Cumberland Gap, 44
- Cumberland River, 121
- Cumberland Valley, 43
- Cushetunk, 156
- Cusick, Nicholas, 158
- Cuyahoga, 158
- Dances, 80-82, 122; religious, 167-68; social, 26
- Deamhoat, Nicholas; *see* Demoot, Nicholas
- Deardorff, Merle, 173
- Death, rites connected with, 62
- Deganawidah, 89-90, 97
- De La Warr, Thomas West, Baron, 16
- Delaware Basin, 138
- Delaware Bay, 16
- Delaware-Hudson region, 67
- Delaware Indians (Lenni Lenape), 3-4, 8, 14, 16-83, 99, 103, 108, 115, 119, 121-22, 132-34, 138, 141, 143, 146-48, 150, 152-54, 157-59, 163-64, 169; agriculture of, 26, 35; amusements of, 77-83; and beards, 20-21; Big House Ceremony of, 66-68; childhood among, 58-60; clothing of, 19; color of, 18; and concepts of landownership, 129, 131; dancing among, 81-83; death and burial among, 62; division of labor among, 30-31; as "exact Observers of Property," 17; fishing by, 36; food and cooking of 31-35; in French and Indian War, 148; games of, 80-81; and the good life, 74-76; government of, 25, 50-53; houses of, 27-28; hunting among, 26, 35-36; and Iroquois compared, 84-85; land cessions and migrations of, 126-39; life cycle among, 58-62; maple sugar making by, 26, 32; marriage among, 61; medicine bundle of, 39; migrations of, after leaving Pennsylvania, 169; mode of dressing hair among, 20; modes of travel by, 40-45; music among, 80; national renaissance of, in Ohio, 176; nose and ear decorations of, 23-24; and old age, 61; Penn's description of, 17; physicians, conjurors, and sorcerers among, 37-38; physique of, 18-19; in Pontiac's War, 149; religion of, 63-76; religious significance of tobacco among, 71-72; scalp lock of, 20; seasonal migrations of, 26; sense of humor of, 11; social organization of, 50-53; superstitions of, 38; sweat lodge used by, 29; tattooing among, 22-23; trade of, 36-37; treatment of prisoners by, 47-49; twelve as the sacred number of, 72-74; use of feathers by, 21; view of afterlife by, 68-69; villages of, 25-27; wampum among, 53-55; warfare of, 46-49; and witches, 38-39; as "women," 56-57; youth's initiation among, 60
- Delaware River, 16, 27, 43, 46, 52, 114, 127, 133-35, 138, 156; *see also* Forks of the Delaware
- Delaware Water Gap, 43, 121, 139, 174
- Demigods (manitos), 64, 66-68, 168
- Demoot, Nicholas, 48-49
- Denonville, Marquis de, 101
- Detroit, Mich., 98, 102, 149, 158, 177, 180
- Diet, 25, 32
- Diseases, tribes destroyed by European, 14
- Discipline; *see* Punishment
- Division of labor, 30-31
- Divorce, 31, 61
- Doctors; *see* Physicians
- Dogs, 26
- Doll Dance, 83
- Domestic animals, 6, 26
- Dongan, Gov. Thomas, 102, 129, 134
- Downes, Randolph C., 124-25
- Dreams, 39, 70, 93; Iroquois theory of, 92-94
- Drums, 80, 82
- Duck Creek, 134, 178
- Dumas, Jean-Daniel, 146
- Dunkard Creek, 43
- Dunning, James, 172
- Duquesne, Fort, 143, 146, 149-50
- Durham Furnace, 122

- Ear adornment, 21, 49
 Earth Mother, 64, 67, 168
 Easton, Pa., 103, 108, 122, 118, 175, 177, 180
 Echpalawehund, Delaware chief, 56
 Ecuyer, Capt. Simeon, 150
 Education, 59-60
 Egholowin, Delaware (Munsee) chief, 172-73
 Eighteenmile Creek, N. Y., 15
 Elder, Rev. John, 152
 Eliade, Mircea, 66
 Eliot, Matthew, 158
 Elkton, Pa., 109
 Elmira, N. Y., 163
 Erie, Pa., 103, 150, 179
 Erie, Lake, 14, 138, 143
 Erie Indians, 14-15, 90, 96, 98-99, 100, 104
 Erie Triangle, 15, 132, 138
 Erichronon (Cat Nation); *see* Erie Indians
 Esther, Queen, 161-62, 172-73; biographical sketch of, 172
 Esther's Glen, 172
 Evans, John, 122, 177

 Face painting, 21-22, 175
 Fadden, John (Ka-hon-hes), 71
 Fairbanks, Alaska, 4
 Fairfield (Moraviantown), Ont., 169
 Fallen Timbers, 164-65
 Family, 55-56
 Farmer's Brother, Seneca Indian, 173
 Feathers, 21
 Fenton, William N., 89
 Finney, Fort, 163
 Firearms, trade in, 85
 Fires; *see* Council Fires
 First Fruits Ceremony, 59, 73
 Fish basket, 30, 36
 Fishing, 36
 Fishing Creek, 160
 Fishwick, Marshall, 10
 Five Nations; *see* Iroquois Indians
 Fletcher, Stevenson Whitcomb, 6
 Flint (the Bad Twin), 71
 Flying Panther (Tecumseh), 114
 Food, 31-35; for souls of the dead, 62, 68
 Forbes, Gen. John, 143, 149-50
 Forbidden Path, 162-63
 Forks of the Delaware, 141, 143, 146, 153, 171, 179
 Forks of the Ohio, 43, 125, 149, 171, 173, 178-79
 Forks of the Susquehanna, Shamokin, 92, 178; Tioga, 12, 162
 Forts, for provincial defense, 146
 Forty Fort, 160-62

 Fox Indians, 113, 115
 Franklin, Benjamin, 153, 157
 Franklin, Pa., 149-50
 Frankstown, 41
 Free Society of Traders, 17
 French and Indian War, 47, 103, 114, 123, 125, 132, 138-39, 143, 149, 152, 155-56, 158, 171-73, 175-77; causes of, 143-44, 146, 148; course of, 145-49; Delaware motives in, 148
 French Creek, 103, 105
 French Lick, Tenn., 44
 French Margaret, biographical sketch of, 172-73
 Freud, Sigmund, 93
 Friedenshütten, 157, 177
 Frontenac, Count, 101
 Funeral rites, 62, 81
 Fur trade, 25, 35, 37, 95-96, 101, 124-25, 143-44

 Gaiwiio (Good Word), 166-68, 174; *see also* New Religion
 Gambling, 80-81
 Games, 80-81, 119, 168
 Ganawaugus (Avon, N. Y.), 172
 Ganawese; *see* Conoy Indians
 Gandastogues (Conestoga or Susquehannock Indians), 11
 Gantlet, Running the, 47
 Gantowisas (matron), 57
 Gap, Pa., 122
 Gaustarax (Mud Eater), Seneca chief, 150; biographical sketch of, 173
 Gekelemukpechink (Newcomerstown, Ohio), 176, 180
 Genesee River, 86, 96, 172-73
 Geneseo, N. Y., 173
 Geneva, N. Y., 163
 Georgian Bay, 12, 98
 Germ warfare, 150
 Germantown, 18
 Ghosts, 62
 Gibson, Hugh, 148
 Gibson, John, 158, 175
 Gideon; *see* Teedyuscung
 Girty, Simon, 158, 175
 Glickhican (Gun Sight), Delaware (Munsee) chief, 173
 Gnadenhütten (Leighton, Pa.), 154, 179
 Gnadenhütten, Ohio, 171, 173-74; massacre of Christian Indians at, 49
 God; *see* Creator, Great Spirit
 Gordon, Gov. Patrick, 125, 175, 177-78
 Goschachking (Coshocton, Ohio), 176
 Goschgoschink, 39, 66, 73
 Government, Delaware, 25, 50-53; Iroquois, 84-89; Shawnee, 115-17
 Granville, Fort, 147, 174

- Great Bear, 67
 Great Bend, Pa., 111
 Great Cove, 179
 Great Island (Lock Haven), 124; *see also* Big Island
 Great Lakes, 96, 143
 Great Manito; *see* Great Spirit
 Great Meadows, 179
 Great Runaway, 159, 162
 Great Spirit, 39, 63-65, 67-68, 72-73, 78-80, 85, 90, 118, 123, 128-29
 Great Stone Face, 67
 Great Warriors Path, 111
 Greathouse, Daniel, 175
 Greenville, Treaty of, 164
 Gun Sight; *see* Glickhican
 Guyasuta, Seneca chief, 150, 165, 172-73; biographical sketch of, 173
 Gyantwahia; *see* Cornplanter
- Hair dress, 10, 20
 Hale, Horatio, 89
 Half King, meaning of, 173-74
 Half King (Tanacharison), 103, 173, 178; biographical sketch of, 179
 Half King's Rock, 179
 Hambright, John, 159
 Handsome Lake (Skaniadariyo), Seneca prophet, 66, 166-68, 170, 172; biographical sketch of, 174
 Hanna, Charles A., 121
 Hannastown, Pa., 163, 173
 Happy Hunting Ground; *see* Land of Happy Spirits
 Harmar, Gen. Josiah, 165
 Harmar, Fort, Treaty of, 163-64, 166
 Harrington, M. R., 64, 68
 Harris, Captain, Delaware Indian, 179
 Harris' Ferry, 111; *see also* Harrisburg
 Harrisburg, Pa., 35, 43, 111, 124, 131, 138, 144, 152, 172, 177
 Hartley, Col. Thomas, 162
 Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 67
 Hazleton, Pa., 109
 Health, 93
 Heckewelder, Rev. John, 21-23, 33-35, 37-38, 61, 65, 69-70, 75, 79, 108, 119, 157, 164, 171, 175-77, 179-80
 Hendrick, Mohawk chief, 92, 155, 170
 Henlopen, Cape, 16
 Henry, Judge William, 174
 Henry, William, (Killbuck), 174
 Herbs, medicinal, 67-68
 Herriot Farm, 13
 Hershey, Benjamin, 152
 Hershey, Christian, 152
 Hesselius, Andreas, 23, 37
 Hewitt, J. N. B., 107
 Hiawatha, Onondaga Indian, 89
 Hiawatha Belt, 89
- Hockendaqua, 175
 Hoffman's Ferry, 99
 Hollidaysburg, Pa., 40
 Home life, 59
 Honeybrook, Pa., 109
 Hoop game, Shawnee, 119
 Hopocan; *see* Pipe, Captain
 House; *see* Beehive house, Longhouse, Wigwam
 Household effects, Delaware, 27-28, 31; Shawnee, 120
 Hudson Bay, 43, 115
 Hudson River, 16, 96
 Hunt, George T., 91, 97
 Hunter, Robert, (Carandowana), Oneida chief, 175
 Hunter, Gov. Robert, 110, 175
 Hunter, Samuel, 159
 Hunter, William A., 147
 Hunting, 25-26, 30, 35-37, 67, 75, 80, 96, 105, 108, 149
 Huntingdon, Pa., 43
 Huntington, Ellsworth, 6
 Huron Indians, 12, 14-15, 94, 96-98, 100-101; *see also* Wyandot Indians
 Huronia, 99
- Illinois Indians, 3, 121-22
 Immortality, 62, 69, 74, 167
 Improved Order of Red Men, 179
 Independence, Mo., 44
 Indian captivities, 48-49; *see also* Prisoners
 Indian paths, 6, 40-42, 120; map of, 42; variety of, 41
 Indian policy, of Dutch, 96, 127; of English, 101, 127; of French, 97, 101, 124; of Pennsylvania, 100, 127, 140-44; of Swedes, 127
 Indian quarry, 22
 Indian state, proposed, 159
 Indian Territory, 119, 169
 Indiana Historical Society, 53
 Initiation, 59; and Youth's Vigil, 60
 Iroquoian linguistic stock, 12, 14-15
 Iroquois Confederacy; *see* Iroquois Indians
 Iroquois Founding Legend, 89-92
 Iroquois Indians, 3, 8-9, 15, 23, 25-28, 31, 40-41, 43, 47, 56-57, 65, 84-96, 98-105, 107-11, 113, 115, 119, 121-23, 125-26, 131-32, 138-39, 141-46, 148, 154-58, 160, 163, 166-67, 169, 171, 173, 176-77; armed neutrality of, 103; attack on Tutelos by, 112; and balance of power, 91, 100-103, 153-54; become Six Nations, 110-11; chiefs of, visit England, 111; colonization policy of, 104; divisions of, during Revolution, 157-

- 64; dream theory of, 92-94; founding legend of, 89-92; homeland of, 84; military position of, 97; national feeling among, 169-70; nineteenth-century renaissance of, 166-68; political organization of, 85-87; population of, 91; position of women among, 87; present situation of, 169-70; refugee tribes and, 104-13; relation of Delawares to, 56-57; religion of, 91, 166-68; and Shawnee settlement in Pennsylvania, 121; trade policy of, 97; at Treaty of Fort Stanwix, 128; Virginia lands released by, 143; wars for survival of, 96-99; and wars with French, 101; and white intruders on Indian lands, 105-106; and Wyoming Valley, 153-55; *see also* Cayuga Indians, Mohawk Indians, Oneida Indians, Onondaga Indians, Seneca Indians, Tuscarora Indians
- Isaac (Glickhican), Delaware (Munsee) chief, 173
- Isle of Que, 92
- Jack's Narrows, 22
- Jacobs, Captain, Delaware chief, 46, 146-47; death of, at Kittanning, 147-48; biographical sketch of, 174
- Jasper quarries, 36
- Jefferson, Thomas, 158
- Jenuchshadego; *see* Cornplanter's Town
- Jesuit missionaries, 14, 65, 71, 93
- Johnson, Sir William, 92, 102-103, 109, 112, 149-50
- Johnstown, Pa., 41, 124
- Joncaire, father and son, 103
- Jumonville Rocks, 179
- Juniata River, 12-13, 22, 40, 108-109, 124, 146, 174
- Juniata Valley, 141
- Ka-hon-hes (John Fadden), 71
- Kakowatchiky, Shawnee chief, 65, 122-23, 177; biographical sketch of, 174
- Kanonsionni (People of the Longhouse), 86; *see also* Iroquois Indians
- Kansas Delawares, 169
- Kansas River, 169
- Katarionecha; *see* Quebec, Peter
- Kayenerenkhowa; *see* Great Peace
- Kenny, James, 179
- Kentucky River, 121
- Kiasutha; *see* Guyasuta
- Kickenapaulin's Old Town, 35
- Kickenapaulin's Town, 124
- Killbuck, John, Jr., (Gelelémend), biographical sketch of, 174
- Killbuck, John, Sr., (Bemineo), Delaware chief, 174
- Killbuck's Island, 174
- King George's War, 145
- Kings, Indian; *see* Chiefs
- Kingston, N. Y., 16
- Kinietz, Vernon, 65
- Kinzua Dam, 170, 172
- Kiotsaeton, Mohawk Indian, 97
- Kishacoquillas, Shawnee chief, biographical sketch of, 174
- Kishacoquillas' Town (Lewistown, Pa.), 124, 174
- Kiskiminetas River, 8
- Kis-po-go (Shawnee tribal division), 115
- Kittanning, Pa., 146, 174
- Kittatinny Mountain, 41, 111, 134, 154, 173, 175
- Knoxville, Tenn., 44
- Kohg-quaw-gu (Eighteenmile Creek), 15
- Kuskusky (New Castle, Pa.), 113, 171
- Labrador, 115
- Lachine, Que., 47, 101
- Lackawanna, Indian town, 111-12, 154
- Lackawanna Path, 111
- Lackawaxen Creek, 135, 139
- Lacrosse, 80
- Lafayette, Marquis de, 158-59
- Lalement, Father Jerome, 93
- Lamberville, Father J. de, 101
- Lancaster, Pa., 43, 100, 109, 122, 152, 159, 171, 178
- Lancaster Treaty, 109, 143
- Land, European and Indian views on titles to, 75, 127-29; Indian tales about, 78, 92; Penn's policy on purchases of, 128; Pennsylvania's grants of, to Indians, 166, 176; Pennsylvania purchases of Indian, 52, 105, 126-39, 164
- Land of Happy Spirits (Happy Hunting Ground), 69, 74, 79, 167-68
- Land Records, Bureau of, 35, 122, 131, 133
- Lapachpeton, Delaware (Unami) Indian, biographical sketch of, 175
- Lapachpeton's Town, 112, 175
- La Potherie, Bacqueville de, 101
- Law, 52, 90
- Lawson, John, 110, 112
- Lawunakhannek (East Hickory, Pa.), 173
- Lebanon Valley, 142
- Le Boeuf, Fort, 149-50, 179

- Lechawachneck; *see* Lackawanna
 Lechawachsein Creek; *see* Lackawaxen Creek
 Lechay Hills; *see* Lehigh Hills
 Legends, 60, 77; Iroquois founding legend, 89-92; *see also* Myths
 Lehigh Hills, 134, 175
 Lehigh River, 52, 175-76, 178-79
 Leighton, Pa., 154, 179
 Le Mercier, François, 15
 Lemoyne, Pa., 124
 Lenape; *see* Delaware Indians
 Lenapewihittuk (Delaware River), 16
 Lenni Lenape; *see* Delaware Indians
 Lescarbot, Marc, 32
 Lewiston, N. Y., 110
 Lewistown, Pa., 124, 147, 174
 Life Cycle, Delaware, 58-62
 Ligonier, Fort, 149-50
 Lindeström, Peter, 21, 27, 33, 35
 Little Turtle, Miami chief, 164
 Lock Haven, Pa., 124, 176-77
 Loft, William Dewaserage, 54
 Logan (Tachnechorus, *alias* John Shickellamy), 155, 157-58, 178; biographical sketch of, 175; and "Logan's Lament," 158
 Logan, James, (Tahgahjute), 175
 Logan, James, Provincial Secretary, 102, 141-43
 Logstown, 123, 125, 174, 178-79
 London, Ont., 169
 Long Island, 16
 Longhouse (dwelling), 6, 27-28
 Longhouse, Props to the, 109, 113, 132; *see also* Iroquois Indians
 Lord Dunmore's War, 180
 Loskiel, George Henry, 20, 22-23, 27, 29, 33, 47, 54, 61, 81, 119
 Lower Sandusky, 61
 Loyalhanna Creek, 124
 Lupwaaenoawuk (Delaware Council), 117
 Lycoming Creek, 44, 138, 159-60, 172
- McClure, David, 175
 Machaloha, Delaware Indian, 133
 Machault, Fort, 149
 McIntosh, Gen. Lachlan, 180
 McIntosh, Fort, 138, 163
 McKee, Alexander, 158
 McKee, Capt. Thomas, 124, 174
 McKee's Rocks, 178
 Macungie, Pa., 36
 Magic, 38-39, 73
 Mahanoy Mountain, 135
 Mahican Indians, 16, 96, 99, 138, 154, 169; merge with the Delawares at Wyoming, 113; as refugees, 123
 Mahican War, 99
- Mahoning Creek, 158
 Mahoning settlement, 160
 Manghousin, Delaware Indian, 133
 Manhattan Island, 16
 Manito (guardian), 39, 60
 Manitos (eleven demigods), 59, 63-66, 72
 Manitoulin Island, 98
 Maple sugar, 26, 32-33
 Margaret; *see* French Margaret
 Marriage, 61
 Mary, Delaware Indian, 152
 Mary (Molly), daughter of French Margaret, 173
 Maryland, Eastern Shore of, 109
 Mask Being, 60, 64
 Mason and Dixon Line, 43
 Massasagues; *see* Missisauga Indians
 Massawomekes (Indians), 9
 Maternity, 58
 Matson's Ford, 159
 Maumee River, 164
 Mayer-Oakes, William J., 13
 May-ko-jay (Shawnee tribal division), 115
 Medeu (conjurers), 38
 Medical cures, 37-39; by fulfilling of dream wishes, 93; of rattlesnake bite, 176
 Medicine, 29, 37-38; tobacco as a, 71; ceremony at the plucking of herbs for, 167
 Medicine Bundle, 39, 72
 Medicine Spring, 170
 Meherrin River, 112
 Mennonites, 152
 Meteor (Tecumseh), 114
 Methodist, 167
 Metoxon, Emerson, Oneida Indian, 4
 Mettamicont, Delaware Indian, 133
 Miami Indians, 118-19, 121, 164-65; war of, with the Iroquois, 101
 Michael, Delaware Indian, 152
 Michael, Delaware (Moravian) Indian, 23
 Michilimackinac, Fort, 149
 Mifflin, Gov. Thomas, 166
 Migrations, from Asia, 4; of Conoys, 107-108; of Delawares, 126-39; Iroquois policy regarding, 105; of Nanticokes, 108-110; seasonal, 26; of Shawnees, 121-25; of Tuscaroras, 110-12; of Tutelos, 112-13
 Milan, Pa., 172
 Mingoes, 11, 105, 132, 144; *see also* Iroquois Indians
 Minisink Path, 41
 Minisinks, the, 121, 146, 171, 176
 Minquas; *see* Mingoes
 Minquas Creek, 127
 Minsi, John; *see* Papoonhank

- Minuit, Peter, 127
Miseekwaawekwaakee (Shawnee society), 118
 Missisauga Indians, 119
 Missouri River, 169
 Moccasin game, 81
 Moccasins, 19, 31, 81
 Mohawk Indians, 54, 71, 85-87, 89, 92, 97-99, 103, 142, 155, 157, 160, 170, 172, 175; origin of name of, 11
 Mohawk River, 99, 109, 161
 Molly (Mary), daughter of French Margaret, 173
 Monacatootha; *see* Scaroyady
 Monongahela Indians, 8, 13-14, 28
 Monongahela River, 8, 11, 13, 41, 43, 142, 171, 174, 176
 Montauk Indians (division of the Mahicans), 16
 Montour, Andrew, (Sattelihi), biographical sketch of, 175-76
 Montour, Catharine, 162
 Montour, Joseph Frederick, Delaware chief, 67, 167
 Montour, Louis Couc, 175
 Montour, Madame, 172; biographical sketch of, 175
 Montour, Margaret; *see* French Margaret
 Montour, Roland, 175
 Montour Creek, 176
 Montoursville, Pa., 175
 Montreal, Que., 47, 96-97, 101-102, 143, 161
 Montreal Treaty (1701), 100-102
 Moravia, Pa., 173
 Moravian church (*Unitas Fratrum*), 123
 Moravian Indians, 56, 153, 169, 173-74, 177, 179; massacre of, 49
 Moravian missionaries, 21, 23, 32, 35, 64-65, 69, 80, 111, 119, 154, 157, 172, 176-77, 180
 Moraviantown (Fairfield), 169
 Mooney, James, 112
 Morgan, George, 158-59, 180
 Morgan, Lewis, 32
 Mortimer, Rev. Benjamin, 80
 Mount Pleasant, Battle of, 175
 Mount Union, Pa., 22
 Mourning, 62, 168
 Mud Eater; *see* Gaustarax
 Muhlenberg, Rev. Henry Melchior, 159
 Muhlenberg, Gen. Peter, 159
 Muncy, Pa., 22, 160
 Muncy Creek, 41
 Muncy Hill, 160
 Muncytown, Ont., 169
 Munsee Indians (Delaware tribal division), 23, 35, 38, 52-53, 80, 121, 139, 154, 169-73, 176-77
 Musheneclin, Delaware Indian, 22, 178
 Music, 80, 82
 Musical instruments, 80
 Muskingum River, 22, 143, 151, 174, 178
 Muskrat, 70
 Myths, 69-71, 78-80; *see also* Legends

 Nain, Pa., 177
 Naming a child, 59
 Nanticoke Flats, 109
 Nanticoke Indians, 16, 39, 107-110, 114, 154, 176; in Maryland, 109; in the Iroquois Confederacy, 112
 Nanticoke Path, 109
 Nanticoke River, 109
 Narhantes, Fort, 110
 Nashville, Tenn., 44
 Nassau, Fort, 18
 Natchez Trace, 44
 Nationalism, among the Iroquois, 85-86, 91; among the Shawnees, 116
 Nearing, Helen and Scott, 32
 Necessity, Fort, 145, 147, 171, 176, 178-79
 Neckatcit, Delaware Indian, 53, 67
 Neolegan; *see* Newallike
 Nescopeck, 146, 176
 Neshaminy Creek, 133-35
 Netawatwees (Newcomer), head chief of the Delawares, 52, 169, 180; biographical sketch of, 176
 Neucheconnch, Shawnee chief, 172
 Neutral Indians, 12, 14, 96, 98, 104
 New Castle, Pa., 158, 171
 New Cumberland, Pa., 124
 New Religion, 166-68, 172, 174
 Newallike, Delaware (Munsee) chief, 111; biographical sketch of, 176
 Newcomb, William W., Jr., 28, 55, 62
 Newcomer; *see* Netawatwees
 Newcomerstown, Ohio, 176, 180
 Newhouse, Seth, Mohawk Indian, 110
 Newtown (Elmira, N. Y.), 163
 Newtown Square, Pa., 127
 Niagara, 12, 98, 104, 161, 163
 Niagara, Fort, 149, 163
 Niagara Gorge, 110
 Nicholas; *see* Quebec, Nicholas
 Nicholas, Wyandot chief, 113
 Niles, Ohio, 158
 Nittany Mountain, 135
 Nootamis; *see* Nutimus
 North Evans, N. Y., 15
 Northeast River, 109
 Northumberland, Pa., 124
 Northwest Territory, 115, 172
 Nose ornaments, 23-24
 Nutimus, Delaware chief, biographical sketch of, 176-177
 Nutimus, Isaac, Delaware Indian, 176
 Nutimus Town, 176

- O'Bail; *see* Abeel
 Octoraro Creek, 122
 Ohesson (Kishacoquillas' Town), 124, 174
 Ohio country, 27, 123, 128, 139, 141-44, 148-49, 153, 171, 176-78
 Ohio Indians, 132, 176
 Ohio River, 8, 13, 40, 96, 105, 114, 123, 144, 155, 157, 164, 171-80
 Ohio Valley, 41, 103, 105, 115
 Oil City, Pa., 166
 Okehocking, 127
 Oklahoma Delawares, 64, 78, 169
 Old age, respect for, 60-61
 Old Peter's Road, 108
 Old Sack, Conoy chief, 107
 Old Sheshequin (Ulster); *see* Sheshequin
 "Old Town," 35
 Oldtown, Md., 43, 124, 177
 Olumapies; *see* Sassoonan
 Oneida Indians, 86, 89, 98, 100, 110, 158-59, 163, 178
On-gwe-o-we (Ongwe-Honwe); *see* Iroquois Indians
 Onondaga, 10, 85-86, 109, 112, 143, 155, 160, 167, 171, 174, 176, 178
 Onondaga Council, 86-89, 110, 144, 155, 171, 174
 Onondaga Indians, 97-98, 102, 158, 167, 171; in the Iroquois Confederacy, 89
 Onondaga Lake, 90
Ononharoia (Dream Festival), 93
 Ontario, Lake, 12, 85, 91
 Opessah, Shawnee chief, 122, 124; biographical sketch of, 177
 Opessah's Town (Oldtown, Md.), 43, 124, 177
 Orange, Fort, 96
 Oregon Trail, 44
 Ornaments, 19
 Oscotax; *see* Gaustarax
 Otsego Lake, 162
 Otseningo; *see* Chenango
 Otstonwakin (Montoursville, Pa.), 175
 Ottawa, Ont., 160
 Ottawa Indians, 101, 119, 121, 149-50
 Ottawa River, 97
 Owego, 108
 Oxford, Pa., 109
 Packanke, Delaware (Munsee) chief, 173
 Pahaquarry, 121
 Paint, on Shawnee war tomahawk, 117; sources of, 22; on trees, 120; *see also* Face painting
 Painted Line, on the Towanda Path, 120
 Painted Post, N. Y., 173
 Pamlico Sound, N. C., 110
 Panther Tribe (Shawnee), 117
 Papoonhank, Delaware (Munsee) prophet, biographical sketch of, 177
 Parker, Arthur, 160
 Passigachkunk, 177
 Pastorius, Daniel, 18
 Path Valley, 111
 Paths; *see* Indian paths
 Patton, John, 174
 Paxinosa, Shawnee chief, 123; biographical sketch of, 177
 Paxtang (Harrisburg), 43, 105, 122, 124, 138, 144, 152, 172, 177
 Paxton; *see* Paxtang
 Paxton Boys, 111, 152-53, 161, 175
 Paxton Presbyterian Church, 152
 Peace, Iroquois conception of, 90-92; Shawnees never sue for, 118; *see also* Tree of Peace
 Peace pipe, 72, 82
 Peace Women, Shawnee, 117-18
 Pechoquealin, 121-22, 174
 Pechstank; *see* Paxtang
Pec-ku-we; *see* Pequea Indians
 Peixtang; *see* Paxtang
 Pemmapecka Creek; *see* Pennypack Creek
 Penn, John, 155
 Penn, Thomas, 142
 Penn, William, 18, 54, 84, 107, 122, 131, 133-34, 141, 145-46, 163-64, 169, 171, 174, 176-77; buys land from Tamanend, 179; describes the Delawares, 17; Indian policy of, 127; land purchases of, 129; "Letter to the Free Society of Traders," 17, 51; letter to the Indians (1681), 128-29
 Penn family, 176-78
 Penn Wampum Belt, 54-55
 Penn's Creek, 135; massacre at, 145
 Penn's Valley, 160
 Pennamite Wars, 153, 157
 Pennypack Creek, 133-34
 Pequea (Shawnee town), 122, 124, 177
 Pequea Creek, 122
 Pequea Indians (Shawnee tribal division), 115-16, 121, 174
 Perkiomen Creek, 133
 Peter's Road; *see* Old Peter's Road
 Peters, Nicodemus, Delaware Indian, 53, 67
 Peters, Richard, 178
 Petroleum, 19
 Petty, John, Cayuga Indian, 178

- Petun Indians (Tobacco Nation), 12, 96, 98-100
- Philadelphia, 43-44, 49, 54, 107, 127, 153, 155-56, 159, 166, 171, 175, 177-79
- Physicians, Indian, 37-39
- Pickawillany, 176
- Pictographs, 53, 120, 178
- Pine Creek, 41, 138, 159
- Pipe, Captain, (Hopocan), Delaware (Munsee) chief, 46, 49, 78, 158-59; biographical sketch of, 177
- Piscataway Creek, 107
- Piscataway Indians, 107
- Pisquetomen, Delaware Indian, 171
- Pitt, Fort, 149-51, 153, 163, 177
- Pittsburgh, Pa., 43, 123, 159, 171, 174, 176; *see also* Forks of the Ohio
- Pittston., Pa., 111, 160
- Plymouth, Pa., 122, 174
- Pocono Mountains, 52, 143
- Poison, Indian use of, 15, 108
- Polygamy, 61
- Pontiac, Ottawa chief, 164
- Pontiac's War, 149-53, 157, 171, 173, 176
- Poquessing Creek, 134
- Port Allegany, Pa., 45
- Post, Christian Frederick, 85, 105, 148-49, 180
- Potawatomi Indians, 119, 149
- Potomac Indians, 134
- Potomac River, 11-13, 43, 107, 124
- Powhatan, 11
- Prayer, 71, 73, 80, 123, 167-68
- Prayer sticks, 73
- Praying over the Child, 59
- Presque Isle, 103, 138, 145
- Presque Isle, Fort, 149-50, 179
- Prisoners, 120, 173; adoption of, 48-49; killing of, after Battle of Wyoming, 160-61; Shawnee treatment of, 118-19
- Procter (Proctor), Thomas, 48-49
- Psindamoakan*, 34
- Puckshenose; *see* Paxinosa
- Punishment, 39, 60; of children, 59-60; death as a, 73
- Quadroque, 11
- Quakers, 93, 141, 143, 148, 153, 166, 177
- Que, Isle of (Selinsgrove, Pa.), 92
- Quebec, Que., 37
- Quebec, Nicholas, 173
- Quebec, Peter, (Katarionecha), Mohawk Indian, 172
- Queen Esther; *see* Esther, Queen
- Queen Esther's Rock, 161
- Queen Esther's Town, 162, 172
- Rageneau, Father Paul, 93
- Rasle, Sebastien, 32
- Rattlesnake taboo, 34
- Raystown Branch, Juniata River, 12-13
- Raystown Path, 41
- Reading, Pa., 109
- Recipes, 33-34
- Red Jacket, Seneca chief, 132
- Red Men, Improved Order of, 179
- Redeye, Brooks, 168
- Refugee Indians, 104-13; Conoys as, 107-108; Mahicans as, 123; Nanticokes as, 108-10; Shawnees as, 114-25; Tuscaroras as, 110-12; Tutelos as, 112-13
- Religion, 63-76; *see also* Big House Ceremony, Iroquois Founding Legend, New Religion
- Rémy, Daniel de, 101
- Revolutionary War; *see* American Revolution
- Richter, Conrad, 151
- Ridley Creek, 127
- Ritchie, William A., 74
- Roanoke River, 112
- Robbins Station, 171
- Romnev, W. Va., 13
- Rush, Dr. Benjamin, 37
- Sac and Fox Indians, 115
- Sachem; *see* Chief
- Sack; *see* Old Sack
- Saghsidowa, Tuscarora chief, 93
- St. Clair, Gen. Arthur, 164-65
- St. Ignace (Huron Indian town), 98
- St. Lawrence River, 37, 85, 91, 97
- St. Louis (Huron Indian town), 98
- St. Mémin, Charles, 24
- St. Tammany; *see* Tamanend
- Ste. Marie (Huron Indian town), 98
- Sakayengwaraghton, Seneca chief, 160-61
- Salamanca; *see* West Salamanca
- Salt Spring (Niles, Ohio), 158
- Sandusky, Ohio, 98, 113, 143, 176
- Sandusky, Fort, 149
- Santa Fe Trail, 44
- Sapling (the Good Twin), 71
- Sasquesahanough, 11
- Sassoonan (Olumapies), head chief of the Delawares, 53, 138, 175-78; biographical sketch of, 177-78
- Sayre, Pa., 112
- Scalp bounty, 148
- Scalp cry; *see* War whoop
- Scalp lock, 10, 20, 48
- Scaroyady, Oneida chief, 87, 125, 173; biographical sketch of, 178
- Schellsburg, Pa., 124
- Schenectady, N. Y., 49, 86

- Schmick, Rev. John Jacob, 64, 72, 111-12
- Schoharie Creek, 99
- Schönbrunn, Ohio, 173, 176
- Schuykill Indians, 53
- Schuykill River, 18, 43, 52, 96, 127, 133-34, 138, 159, 171, 177-78
- Scioto River, 125, 172
- Selinsgrove, Pa., 92, 145
- Seneca Indians, 14, 23, 86-88, 93, 97-101, 103-105, 110, 113, 143, 145, 149-50, 158-60, 162-63, 165-66, 169, 171-73, 175, 179; as Elder Brothers, 89; in Pontiac's War, 149
- Seneca Oil, 19
- Sewickley (Springdale, Pa.), 124
- Sewickley Creek, 124
- Sewickley Indians (Shawnee tribal division), 115-16
- Sewing, 19
- Shackamaxon Elm, treaty at, 54, 179
- Shackatawlin, Delaware Indian, 178
- Shades of Death, 41
- Shamokin (Sunbury, Pa.), 105, 108-109, 122, 138, 142, 148, 154-55, 159, 171, 178
- Sharenkhowane (William Dewaseraige Loft), Mohawk chief, 54
- Shawnee Cabins, 124
- Shawnee Creek (Yellow Breeches Creek), 124, 172
- Shawnee Flats, 122-23
- Shawnee Gardens (Gap, Pa.), 122
- Shawnee Indians, 14, 43, 65, 99, 103, 113, 134, 138, 141-43, 146, 150, 154, 163-64, 172-74, 177-80; on the Allegheny River, 124-25; history, government, and customs of, 114-21; Kakowatchiky as chief of, 122-23; migrations of, 121-25
- Shawnee Island, 121
- Shawnee Lake, 121
- Shawnee-on-the-Delaware, 121
- Shawnee Prophet, 118, 120
- Shawnee Run, 121
- Shawnee Town (Columbia, Pa.), 122
- Shawnee Town, on the Scioto, 172
- Sheep Rock Shelter, 13
- Shenandoah Valley, 43-44
- Shenango, 49
- Shenango River, 158
- Sherman Creek, 176
- Sheshequin (Ulster, Pa.), 105, 162, 172, 176
- Sheshequin Path, 162
- Shickellamy, Iroquois vicegerent, 44, 109, 138, 142, 173, 175; biographical sketch of, 178; dreams with Conrad Weiser, 92
- Shickellamy, Jake ("unhappy" Jake), 178
- Shickellamy, John, (Tachnechdorus); *see* Logan
- Shickellamy, John Petty, 178
- Shingas, Delaware chief, 46, 146, 169, 171, 174; biographical sketch of, 178-79; death of wife of, 36, 62
- Shirleysburg, Pa., 174
- Silverlake; *see* Handsome Lake
- Sinnemahoning Creek, 41, 45
- Six, Dietrich, 147
- Six Nations; *see* Iroquois Indians
- Six Nations Reserve, Ont., 53, 67, 167, 169
- Skaniadariyo; *see* Handsome Lake
- Skogary, 112
- Smith, George, 127
- Smith, Col. James, 51, 147
- Smith, Capt. John, 17, 37, 107-108, 140; character of, 10; describes the Susquehannocks, 9-10; map of Virginia by, 11
- Smoothtown, 53
- Snakes, 34, 71, 90
- Snow Hill, N. C., 110
- Social organization, 50-53, 55-56
- Society of St. Tammany, 179
- Songs, 60, 82; religious, 168
- Sonnontoechronnon Indians, 15; *see also* Seneca Indians
- Sons of King Tammany, 179
- Soul, 63; desires of, made known in dreams, 94; in the heart and blood, 62; journey of, to the Spirit World, 62, 73, 168
- Spearthrower, 5
- Speck, Frank G., 22, 67, 72, 113
- Spirit Adoption Ceremony, Tutelo, 113
- Sports, 80
- Springdale, Pa., 124
- Squaw Campaign, 49, 158-59, 177
- Standing Stone, 43
- Stanwix, Fort, Treaty of, of 1768, 135, 138, 157; of 1784, 128, 163-64
- Steel Trap, Tuscarora Indian, 172
- Steeltown, Pa., 122
- Stewart, Lazarus, 152-53, 161
- Storytelling, 60, 77-80, 82
- Strope, Jane (Mrs. Whittaker), 162, 172
- Stroudsburg, Pa., 121
- Suicide, 61
- Sullivan, Gen. John, 162-63
- Sullivan, Fort (Tioga), 162
- Summit, Pa., 179
- Sunbury, Pa., 122, 132, 138, 148, 159, 171, 178
- Superstition, 38
- Supreme Being; *see* Great Spirit
- Supreme Executive Council of Pennsylvania, 138, 159
- Susquehanna Delawares, 155-56, 178

- Susquehanna Path, 92
 Susquehanna River, 16, 40, 43, 96, 99, 100, 107, 114, 122, 124, 127, 132-35, 138, 142, 144, 148, 154, 175-78; North Branch of 12, 104, 108, 111-12, 146, 153, 157, 159-60; West Branch of, 13, 40, 45, 108, 171, 175, 177
 Susquehanna Company of Connecticut, 139, 155-156
 Susquehannock fort, 99-100
 Susquehannock Indians, 14, 26-27, 37, 46, 56, 84, 86, 96, 98-99, 107, 109, 112, 122, 129, 131, 140, 152, 177; defeat of, in Beaver Wars, 99-100; geographical bounds of, 13; manners and customs of, 8-12
 Swataney; *see* Shickellamy
 Sweat Lodge, 20, 29
 Sweat Lodge Ceremony, 73
 Swedish colonization, 127
 Symbols, 83, 89-91; religious, 66-68; of peace, 90
 Syracuse, N. Y., 86, 178

 Taboos, 34-35, 75
 Tachnechdorus; *see* Shickellamy, John
 Tadoussac, Que., 37
 Tamanend, Delaware chief, 54; biographical sketch of, 179; releases land to William Penn, 179
 Tamanend, Pa., 179
 Tamaqua; *see* Beaver
 Tamaqua, Pa., 109
 Taminy; *see* Tamanend
 Tammany Hall, 179
 Tanacharison (the Half King), Seneca chief, 103, 173, 178; biographical sketch of, 179
 Tantaquidgeon, Gladys, 38-39, 78
 Tarentum, Pa., 124
 Tattooing, 21-23
 Tecumseh, Shawnee chief, 75, 114-15
 Teedyuscung, "King," Delaware Indian, 143, 154, 157, 169, 175-76; biographical sketch of, 179-80; "Bird on Bow" speech of, 156; death of, 156, 180; seeks a permanent home for his people, 148, 155-56
 Tennessee River, 121
 Tenskwatawa, the Shawnee Prophet, 116-17
 Tesinigh, 11
 Thadodaho; *see* Atotarho
 Thames River, Ont., 169
 Thanksgiving, 81; dance of, 83; Brooks Redeye's prayer of, 168
The-we-gi-la; *see* Sewickley
 Thomas, Gov. George, 107
 Thompson's Island, 163

 Three Rivers, Que., 175
 Three Sisters (corn, beans, and squash), 13, 31
 Thwaites, Reuben Gold, 15
 Tioga (Athens, Pa., and vicinity), 105, 112, 123, 163, 177
 Tioga Point (Athens, Pa.), 12, 172
 Tobacco, 71-73, 167
 Tobacco Nation; *see* Petun Indians
 Tobacco pipe, 9, 14, 72, 82, 93
 Tohiccon Creek, 176
 Tomahawk, 82, 117
 Tonawanda, N. Y., 166, 174
 Toodleytown, 112
 Torture, 48
 Tostee, Peter, 125, 172
 Towanda, Pa., 157
 Towanda Path, 120
 Towns, Indian; *see* Villages
 Tracy, Marquis de, 101
 Trade, 36-37, 96; as cause of French and Indian War, 143; Dutch policy on, 96; early, to America, 95; Indian complaints about, 125; at Tadoussac, 37
 Traders' Path, 125
 Transportation; *see* Canoes, Indian paths
 Travel, 40-45, 120
 Tree of Peace, 90-92, 98, 100, 105, 112, 142, 169
 Trelease, Allen W., 96
 Trent, William, 176
 Trenton, N. J., 127, 179
 Trowbridge, C. C., 78, 118
Tschipecy Hacki; *see* Land of Happy Spirits
 Tulpehocken lands, 171
 Tunkhannock Creek, 176
 Turkey, 52, 68, 79, 171
 Turtle, 52, 68-69, 71-72, 79, 174
 Turtle Creek, 150
 Tuscarawas, Indian town, 61, 171, 178-79
 Tuscarawas River, 173, 176-77, 180
 Tuscarora Creek, 111
 Tuscarora Indians, 110-12, 114, 158, 172, 175-76; adopted by the Iroquois, 89; migrate to the Iroquois country, 111
 Tuscarora Mountain, 111
 Tuscarora Old Town, 111
 Tuscarora Path, 110-11
 Tuscarora Post Office, 111
 Tuscarora Town, 111
 Tuscarora War, 110
 Tutelo Indians, 112-14
 Tutelow Creek, 112
 Tutelow Town, 112
 Twelve (sacred number), 69, 72-74
 Twichtwees (Miamis), 119

- Twins, Sapling and Flint, 71
 Two Lick Creek, 45
 Tyoninhasachta (Endless Mountains), 135
- Ulster, Pa., 162, 172
 Unalachtigo Indians (Delaware tribal division), 52, 171
 Unami Indians (Delaware tribal division), 52-53, 138-39, 175-77
 Uniontown, Pa., 43, 179
 Upper Sandusky, Ohio, 177; battle at, 49, 159, 177
 Utchowig, 11
- Valley Forge, Pa., 158
 Van Schaick, Col. Goose, 162
 Venango (Franklin, Pa.), 48, 149
 Venango, Fort, 149-50
 Vermillion, 19
 Villages, 25-27
 Villiers, Louis Coulon de, 147, 174
 Virginia Road, 43, 112
 Voltaire, François Marie Arouet de, 55, 179
- Wabash River, 164
Walam Olum, 53
 Walking Purchase, 131-32, 135, 139, 142-43, 146, 153-54, 171, 176, 179
 Walks with Daylight (Witapanoxwe), Delaware Indian, 78-79
 Wallace, Anthony F. C., 94
 Wallis, Samuel, 160
 Wampum, 19, 21, 23, 53-55, 60, 92, 109, 174, 176, 178
 Wangomen, Delaware prophet, 39, 66
 Wappinger Indians (division of Mahicans), 66
 War, of French and Iroquois, 92, 101; Indian tactics in, 46-47, 146-47; of Iroquois and Mahicans, 56; of Pennsylvania with Indians, 145-64; Shawnees at, 117-18; *see also* American Revolution, Beaver Wars, French and Indian War, Pontiac's War
 War dance, 47, 82-83, 118
 War whoop, 47, 159
 Warren, Pa., 132, 163, 174
 Warriors, 77, 85, 87
 Warriors Path, 43, 111
 Washington, George, 166, 171, 176, 178-79
 Washington, D. C., 107
 Washington Boro, Pa., 11, 100, 107
 Waterford, Pa., 179
- Wathatatoh; *see* Atotarho
 Wayne, Gen. Anthony, 164-65
 Wayne, Fort, 116, 164
 Wea Indians, 164
 Weiser, Conrad, 56, 86, 102, 109, 112, 123, 142-43, 146, 154-55, 171, 174-76, 178-79; dreams with Shickellamy, 92; on Indian religion, 63, 76
 Weiser, John Conrad, 139
 Wenro Indians, 12, 96
 West, Benjamin, 179
 West, Thomas, Baron De La Warr, 16
 West Athens, Pa., 172
 West Chester, Pa., 127
 West Hickory, Pa., 166
 West Salamanca, N. Y., 163
 Weslager, C. A., 107
 White, John, 27
 White, Marian, 15
 White Eyes, Captain, Delaware chief, 158-59, 169, 174, 176; biographical sketch of, 180
 White Path, 68, 83
 White Roots of Peace, 105
 Whittaker, Mrs.; *see* Strobe, Jane
 Wigwam, 28, 120
 Wilkes-Barre, Pa., 122, 138, 153, 171, 179
 Wilkins, Gen. John, 166
 Williamsport, Pa., 171-72
 Winchester, Ky., 172
 Wind gaps, 40-41
 Wingebone, Delaware Indian, 133
 Witapanoxwe; *see* Walks with Daylight
 Witches and witchcraft, 38-39, 108
 Witthoft, John, 31, 74
 Woapalanne; *see* Bald Eagle
 Wolf, 52, 68, 79-80, 169-70, 173; taboo against killing a, 35; *see also* Munsee Indians
 Womelsdorf, Pa., 178
 Women, in council of warriors and, 87; creation of, 71; Delawares as, 56-57, 132; in division of labor, 30-31, 120; political influence of, 87-88; as prisoners, 48; in social dances, 82; urge peace with the United States, 164
 Woodcraft, 120
 "World on the Turtle's Back," 69-71
 World Tree, 66, 68
 Worshipping Dance, 83
 Wrestling, 80
 Wrightstown, Pa., 139
 Wyalusing, Pa., 41, 64, 105, 111, 153, 157, 177
 Wyandot Indians (Hurons), 12, 98, 119, 121, 144, 147, 150, 163-64; in Pontiac's War, 149; settle at Kuskusky, 113; *see also* Huron Indians

Wyoming (Wilkes-Barre, Pa., and vicinity), 105, 108, 153, 179; destruction of, 156
Wyoming, Battle of, 155, 160-62, 172
Wyoming Flats, 154
Wyoming Massacre, of 1763, 156; of 1778, 153-54, 160-62
Wyoming Purchase, 155, 159, 178
Wyoming Valley, 109, 122-23, 138-39, 143, 146, 154, 156-57, 171, 174, 177, 180; contest for, 153-57

Yadkin River, 112
Yager, William E., 84
Yellow Breeches Creek, 124, 172
Yellow Creek, 157, 175
Youghiogheny River, 8, 124, 171
Youth's Vigil, 60, 74

Zeisberger, Rev. David, 18, 22, 27, 33, 38-39, 44, 64, 69-70, 73, 108, 112, 173
Zinzendorf, Nikolaus Ludwig, Graf von, 65, 122-23, 174-75

